











THE

HISTORY

OF

TOM JONES,

A FOUNDLING.

BY

HENRY FIELDING, Esq.

Mores hominum multorum vidit.

VOL. III.

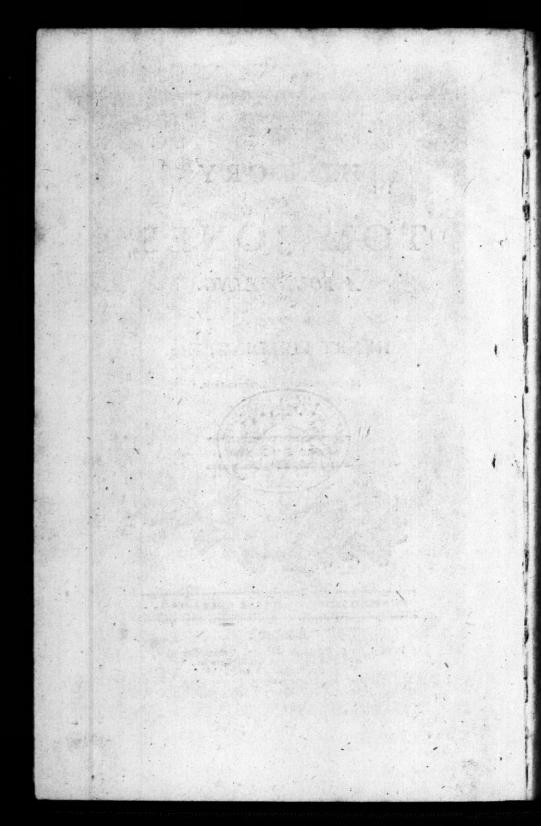
Cooke's Evition.



EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

London :

Printed for C. COOKE, No. 17, Paternoster-Row, and fold by all the Booksellers in Great Britain and Ireland.



HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK XIII.

Containing the Space of twelve Days.

CHAP. I.

An Invocation.

OME, bright Love of Fame, inspire my glowing breast! Not thee I call, who, over swelling tides of blood and tears, doft bear the hero on to glory, while fighs of millions waft his spreading fails; but thee, fair, gentle maid, whom Menelis, happy nymph, first on the banks of Hebrus did produce: thee! whom Mæonia educated, whom Mantua charmed, and who, on that fair hill which overlooks the proud metropolis of Britain, fat'ft, with thy Milton, sweetly tuning the heroic lyre! fill my ravished fancy with the hopes of charming ages yet to come. Foretel me, that some tender maid, whose grandmother is yet unborn, hereafter, when, under the fictious name of Sophia, the reads the real worth which once existed in my Charlotte, shall, from her sympathetic breast, send forth the heaving sigh! Do thou teach me not only to foresee, but to enjoy, nay, even to feed on future praise! Comfort me by a solemn assurance, that when the little parlour, in which I fit at this instant, shall be reduced to a worse-furnished box, I shall be read, with honour, by those who never knew nor saw me, and whom I shall neither know nor see!

And thou! much plumper dame, whom no airy forms nor phantoms of imagination clothe; whom the well-feasoned beef, and pudding, richly stained with plumbs, delight; thee, I call: of whom, in a Treckschuyte in some Dutch canal, the fat usrow gelt, impregnated by a jolly merchant of Amsterdam, was delivered: in Grub-street school didst thou suck in the elements of thy erudition. Here hast thou, in thy maturer age, taught poetry to tickle not the fancy, but the pride of the patron. Comedy from thee learns a grave and solemn air; while

A 2

tragedy storms loud, and rends the affrighted theatres with its thunder. To foothe thy wearied limbs in flumber, Alderman History tells his tedious tale; and again to awaken thee, Monsieur Romance performs his furprifing tricks of dexterity. Nor less thy well-fed bookseller obeys thy influence. By thy advice, the heavy, unread, folio lump, which long had dozed on the dufty shelf, peacemealed into numbers, runs nimbly through the nation. Instructed by thee, some books, like quacks, impose on the world by promising wonders; while others turn beaux, and trust all their merits to a gilded outside. Come, thou jolly substance, with thy shining face, keep back thy inspiration, but hold forth thy tempting rewards; thy shining, chinking heap; thy quickly convertible bank-bill, big with unseen riches; thy often varying flock; the warm the comfortable house; and, lastly, a fair portion of that bounteous mother, whose flowing breafts yield redundant fustenance for all her numerous offspring, did not some too greedily and wantonly drive their brethren from the teat. Come, thou! and if I am too tasteless of the valuable treasures, warm my heart with the transporting thought of conveying them to others. Tell me that, through thy bounty, the pratling babes, whose innocent play hath often been interrupted by my labours, may one time be amply rewarded for them.

And now this ill yoked pair, this lean shadow, and this fat substance, have prompted me to write, whose

affiftance shall I invoke to direct my pen?

First, Genius! thou gift of Heaven; without whose aid, in vain we struggle against the stream of nature. Thou, who dost sow the generous seeds which art nourishes, and brings to perfection; do thou kindly take me by the hand, and lead me through all the mazes, the winding labyrinths of nature. Initiate me into all those mysteries which profane eyes never beheld. Teach me (which to thee is no difficult task) to know mankind better than they know themselves. Remove that mist which dims the intellects of mortals, and causes them to adore men for their art, or to detest them for their cunning in

deceiving others, when they are, in reality, the objects only of ridicule for deceiving themselves. Strip off the thin disguise of wisdom from self-conceit, of plenty from avarice, and of glory from ambition. Come, thou, that hast inspired thy Aristophanes, thy Lucian, thy Cervantes, thy Rabelais, thy Moliere, thy Shakespear, thy Swift, thy Marivaux, fill my pages with humour; till mankind learn the good nature to laugh only at the follies of others, and the humility to grieve at their own.

And thou, almost the constant attendant on true genius, Humanity! bring all thy tender sensations. If thou hast already disposed of them all between thy Allen and thy Lyttleton, steal them a little while from their bosoms. Not without these the tender scene is painted. From these alone proceed the noble disinterested friendship, the melting love, the generous sentiment, the ardent gratitude, the soft compassion, the candid opinion; and all those strong energies of a good mind, which fill the moistened eyes with tears, the glowing cheeks with blood, and swell the heart with tides of grief, joy, and benevolence!

And thou, O Learning! (for, without thy affishance, nothing pure, nothing correct, can genius produce,) do thou guide my pen. Thee! in thy favourite fields, where the limpid, gently-rolling Thames washes the Etonian Banks, in early youth I have worshipped. To thee, at thy birchen altar, with true Spartan devotion, I have facrificed my blood. Come, then, and from thy vast luxuriant stores, in long antiquity piled up, pour forth the rich profusion. Open thy Mæonian and thy Mantuan coffers, with whatever else includes thy philosophic, thy poetic, and thy historical treasures; whether with Greek or Roman characters thou hast chosen to inscribe the ponderous chests; give me awhile that key to all thy treasures, which to thy Warburton thou hast entrusted.

Lastly, come Experience, long conversant with the wife, the good, the learned, and the polite. Nor with them only, but with every kind of character, from the

A 3

minister, at his levee, to the bailiff in his spunging house; from the dutches at her drum, to the landlady behind her bar. From thee only can the manners of mankind be known; to which the recluse pedant, however great his parts, or extensive his learning may be, hath ever been a stranger.

Come all these, and more, if possible; for arduous is the task I have undertaken; and, without all your assistance, will, I find, be too heavy for me to support. But, if you all smile on my labours, I hope still to bring

them to a happy conclusion.

CHAP. II.

What befel Mr. Jones on his arrival in London.

THE learned Dr. Misaubin used to say, that the proper direction to him was, to Dr. Misaubin, in the world; intimating, that there were sew people in it to whom his great reputation was not known. And, perhaps, upon a very nice examination into the matter, we shall find that this circumstance bears no inconsiderable part among the

many bleffings of grandeur.

The great happiness of being known to posterity, with the hopes of which we so delighted ourselves in the preceding chapter, is the portion of sew. To have the several elements which compose our names, as Sydenham expresses it, repeated a thousand years hence, is a gift beyond the power of title and wealth; and is scarce to be purchased, unless by the sword and the pen. But to avoid the scandalous imputation, while we yet live, of being one whom nobody knows—a scandal, by the bye, as old as the days of Homer*—will always be the envied portion of those who have a legal title either to honour or estate.

From that figure, therefore, which the Irish peer, who brought Sophia to town, hath already made in this history, the reader will conclude, doubtless, it must have been an easy matter to have discovered his house in London, without knowing the particular street or square which he inhabited, since he must have been one whom every body knows. To say the truth, so it would have

^{*} See the second Odysfey, ver. 175.

been to any of those tradesmen who are accustomed to attend the regions of the great; for the doors of the great are generally no less easy to find, than it is difficult to get entrance into them. But Jones, as well as Partridge, was an entire stranger in London; and as he happened to arrive first in a quarter of the town, the inhabitants of which have very little intercourse with the householders of Hanover or Grosvenor Square, (for he entered through Gray's Inn Lane,) so he rambled about some time before he could even find his way to those happy mansions, where fortune segregates from the vulgar those magnanimous heroes, the descendants of ancient Britons, Saxons, or Danes, whose ancestors, being born in better days, by sundry kinds of merit, have entailed riches and honour on their posterity.

Jones being at length arrived at those terrestrial Elysian fields, would now soon have discovered his lordship's mansion; but the peer unluckily quitted his former house when he went for Ireland; and as he was just entered into a new one, the same of his equipage had not yet sufficiently blazed in the neighbourhood: so that after a successels inquiry till the clock had struck eleven, Jones, at last, yielded to the advice of Partridge, and retreated to the Bull and Gate in Holborn; that being the inn where he first alighted; and where he retired to enjoy that kind of repose which usually attends persons in his cir-

cumftances.

Early in the morning he again set forth in pursuit of Sophia; and many a weary step he took to no better purpose than before. At last, whether it was that fortune relented, or whether it was no longer in her power to disappoint him, he came into the very street which was honoured by his lordship's residence; and being directed to the house, he gave one gentle rap at the door.

The porter, who from the modesty of the knock, had conceived no high idea of the person approaching, conceived but little better from the appearance of Mr. Jones, who was dressed in a suit of fustian, and had by his side the weapon formerly purchased of the serjeant; of which

though the blade might be composed of well-tempered steel, the handle was composed only of brass, and that none of the brightest. When Jones, therefore, inquired after the young lady who had come to town with his lordship, this tellow answered surily, that there were no ladies there. Jones then desired to see the master of the house; but was informed that his lordship would see nobody that morning. And upon growing more pressing, the porter said he had positive orders to let no person in. But if you think proper, said he, to leave your name, I will acquaint his lordship; and if you call another time, you shall know when he will see you.

Jones now declared, that he had very particular bufiness with the young lady, and could not depart without seeing her; upon which the porter, with no very agreeable voice or aspect, affirmed that there was no young lady in that house, and consequently none could he see; adding, 'Sure you are the strangest man I ever

met with, for you will not take an answer!'

I have often thought that, by the particular description of Cerberus, the porter of hell, in the fixth Æneid, Virgil might possibly intend to satirize the porters of the great men in his time; the picture, at least, resembles those who have the honour to attend at the doors of our great men. The porter, in his lodge, answers exactly to Cerberus in his den; and like him, must be appealed by a fop, before access can be gained to his master. Perhaps Jones might have feen him in that light, and have recollected the paffage where the Sibyl, in order to procure an entrance for Æneas, presents the keeper of the Stygian avenue with fuch a fop. Jones, in like manner, now began to offer a bribe to the human Cerberus, which a footman overhearing, instantly advanced, and declared if Mr. Jones would give him the sum proposed, he would conduct him to the lady. Jones instantly agreed, and was forthwith conducted to the lodging of Mrs Fitzpatrick, by the very fellow who had attended the ladies thither the day before.

Nothing more aggravates ill success than the near ap-

proach to good. The gamester, who loses his party at piquet by a single point, laments his bad luck ten times as much as he who never came within a prospect of the game. So in a lottery, the proprietors of the next numbers to that which wins the great prize, are apt to account themselves much more unfortunate than their sellow sufferers. In short, these kind of hair-breath missings of happiness, look like the insults of Fortune, who may be considered as thus playing tricks with us,

and wantonly diverting herself at our expence.

Jones, who more than once already had experienced this frolicksome disposition of the heathen goddels, was now again doomed to be tantalized in the like manner: for he arrived at the door of Mrs. Fitzpatrick about ten minutes after the departure of Sophia. He now addressed himself to the waiting woman belonging to Mrs. Fitzpatrick; who told him the disagreeable news, that the lady was gone, but could not tell him whither: and the same answer he afterwards received from Mrs. Fitzpatrick herself. For as that lady made no doubt but that Mr. Jones was a person detached from her uncle Western, in pursuit of his daughter, so she was too generous to betray her.

Though Jones had never feen Mrs. Fitzpatrick, yet he had heard that a coufin of Sophia was married to a gentleman of that name. This, however, in the present tumult of his mind, never once recurred to his memory: but when the footman, who had conducted him from his lordship's, acquainted him with the great intimacy between the ladies, and with their calling each other cousin, he then recollected the story of the marriage which he had formerly heard; and as he was presently convinced that this was the same woman, he became more surprised at the answer which he had received, and very earnestly defired leave to wait on the lady herself, but she as positively

refused him that honour.

Jones, who, though he had never seen a court, was better bred than most who frequent it, was incapable of any rude or abrupt behaviour to a lady. When he had received, therefore, a peremptory denial, he retired,

for the present, saying to the waiting woman, that if this was an improper hour to wait on her lady, he would return in the afternoon; and that he then hoped to have the honour of seeing her. The civility with which he uttered this, added to the great comeliness of his person, made an impression on the waiting woman, and she could not help answering, 'Perhaps, Sir, you may.' And, indeed, she afterwards said every thing to her mistress, which she thought most likely to prevail on her to admit a visit from the handsome young gentleman; for so she called him.

Jones very shrewdly suspected, that Sophia herself was now with her cousin, and was denied to him, which he imputed to her resentment of what had happened at Upton. Having, therefore, dispatched Partridge to procure him lodgings, he remained all day in the street, watching the door where he thought his angel lay concealed; but no person did he see issue forth, except a servant of the house; and in the evening he returned to pay his visit to Mrs. Fitzpatrick, which that good lady at last condescended to admit.

There is a certain air of natural gentility, which it is neither in the power of dress to give, nor to conceal. Mr. Jones, as hath been before hinted, was possessed of this in a very eminent degree. He met, therefore, with a reception from the lady, somewhat different from what his apparel seemed to demand; and after he had paid her

his proper respects, was defired to fit down.

The reader will not, I believe, be desirous of knowing all the particulars of this conversation, which ended very little to the satisfaction of poor Jones. For though Mrs. Fitzpatrick soon discovered the lover, (as all women have the eyes of hawks in those matters,) yet she still thought it was such a lover as a generous friend of the lady should not betray her to. In short, she suspected this was the very Mr. Bliss from whom Sophia had slown; and all the answers which she artfully drew from Mr. Jones, concerning Mr. Allworthy's family, consirmed her in this opinion. She therefore strictly denied any knowledge concerning the place whither Sophia was gone

nor could Jones obtain more than a permission to wait

on her again the next evening.

When Jones was departed, Mrs Fitzpatrick communicated her suspicion concerning Mr. Bliss to her maid; who answered, 'Sure, Madam, he is too pretty a man, in my opinion, for any woman in the world to run away from. I had rather fancy it is Mr. Jones.'—'Mr. Jones! said the lady; what Jones? For Sophia had not given the least hint of any such person in all their conversation: but Mrs. Honour had been much more communicative, and had acquainted her sister Abigail with the whole history of Jones, which this now again related to her mistress.

Mrs. Fitzpatrick no fooner received this information, than she immediately agreed with the opinion of her maid; and, what is very unaccountable, faw charms in the gallant, happy lover, which she had overlooked in the flighted squire. Betty, said she, you are certainly in the right: he is a very pretty fellow, and I don't wonder that my cousin's maid should tell you so many women are fond of him. I am forry now I did not inform him where my cousin was: and yet, if he be so terrible a rake as you tell me, it is a pity she should ever fee him any more; for what but her ruin can happen, from marrying a rake and a beggar against her father's consent? I protest, if he be such a man as the wench deferibed him to you, it is but an office of charity to keep her from him; and I am fure, it would be unpardonable in me to do otherwise, who have tasted so bitterly of the misfortunes attending fuch marriages.

Here she was interrupted by the arrival of a visitor, which was no other than his lordship; and as nothing passed at this visit either new or extraordinary, or any ways material to this history, we shall here put an end to

this chapter.

CHAP. III.

A Project of Mrs. Fitzpatrick; and ber Vifit to Lady Bellaston.

WHEN Mrs. Fitzpatrick retired to rest, her thoughts were entirely taken up by her cousin

Sophia and Mr. Jones. She was, indeed, a little offended with the former, for the difingenuity which she now discovered: in which mediation she had not long exercised her imagination, before the following conceit suggested itself: that could she possibly become the means of preserving Sophia from this man, and of restoring her to her father, she should, in all human probability, by so great a service to the family, reconcile to herself both her uncle and her aunt Western.

As this was one of her most favourite wishes, so the hope of success seemed so reasonable, that nothing remained but to consider of proper methods to accomplish her scheme. To attempt to reason the case with Sophia, did not appear to her one of those methods: for as Betty had reported from Mrs. Honour, that Sophia had a violent inclination to Jones, she conceived, that to dissuade her from the match was an endeavour of the same kind, as it would be very heartily and earnestly to entreat a moth not to fly into a candle.

If the reader will please to remember that the acquaintance which Sophia had with Lady Bellaston, was contracted at the house of Mrs. Western, and must have grown at the very time when Mrs. Fitzpatrick lived with this latter lady, he will want no information, that Mrs. Fitzpatrick must have been acquainted with her likewise. They were, besides, both equally her dis-

tant relations.

After much consideration, therefore, she resolved to go early in the morning to that lady, and endeavour to see her, unknown to Sophia, and to acquaint her with the whole affair. For she did not in the least doubt, but that the prudent lady, who had often ridiculed romantic love, and indiscreet marriages, in her conversation, would very readily concur in her tentiments concerning this match, and would lend her utmost assistance to prevent it.

This resolution she accordingly executed; and the next morning before the sun she huddled on her cloaths, and, at a very unfashionable, unseasonable, unvisitable hour, went to Lady Bellaston, to whom she got access, without the least knowledge or suspicion of Sophia; who, though not afleep, lay at that time awake in her bed, with Ho-

nour inoring by her fide.

Mrs. Fitzpatrick made many apologies for an early, abrupt visit, at an hour when, she said, she should not have thought of disturbing her ladyship, but upon business of the utmost consequence. She then opened the whole affair, told all she had heard from Betty, and did not forget the visit which Jones had paid to herself the

preceding evening.

ft

d

it

2

ee.

se.

t

ic

d

15

4 4

Xt

1,

r,

ut

h

Lady Bellaston answered with a smile—' Then you have seen this terrible man, Madam: pray, is he so very fine a figure as he is represented? For Etoss entertained me last night almost two hours with him. The wench, I believe, is in love with him by reputation.' Here the reader will be apt to wonder; but the truth is, that Mrs. Etoss, who had the honour to pin and unpin the lady Bellaston, had received complete information concerning the said Mr. Jones, and had faithfully conveyed the same to her lady last night (or rather that morning) while she was undressing; on which account she had been detained in her office above the space of an hour and a half.

The lady, indeed, though generally well enough pleased with the narratives of Mrs. Etoff at those seasons, gave an extraordinary attention to her account of Jones, for Honour had described him as a very handsome sellow; and Mrs. Etoff, in her hurry, added so much to the beauty of his person in her report, that Lady Bellaston began to conceive him to be a kind of miracle in nature.

The curiofity which her woman had inspired was now greatly increased by Mrs. Fitzpatrick, who spoke as much in the favour of the person of Jones as she had before spoken

in dispraise of his birth, character, and fortune.

When Lady Bellaston had heard the whole, she answered gravely—' Indeed, Madam, this is a matter of great consequence. Nothing can certainly be more commendable than the part you act; and I shall be very glad to have my share in the preservation of a young lady of so much merit, and for whom I have so much esteem.'

Doth not your ladyship think, says Mrs. Fitzpatrick eagerly, that it would be the best way to write im-Vol. III. mediately to my uncle, and acquaint him where my coufin is?

The lady pondered a little supon this, and thus anfwered—' Why, no, Madam; I think not. Di Weftern hath described her brother to me to be such a brute,
that I cannot consent to put any woman under his power
who hath escaped from it. I have heard that he behaved
like a monster to his own wise; for he is one of those
wretches who think they have a right to tyrannize over
us; and from such I shallever esteem it the cause of my
fex to rescue any woman who is so unfortunate as to be
under their power. The business, dear cousin, will be
only to keep Miss Western from seeing this young fellow,
till the good company, which she will have an opportunity of meeting here, give her a properer turn.'

If he should find her out, Madam, answered the other, your ladyship may be affured he will leave nothing

unattempted to come at her.'

But, Madam, replied the lady, it is impossible he should come here; though, indeed, it is possible he may get some intelligence where she is, and then may lurk about the house: I wish, therefore, I knew his person. Is there no way, Madam, by which I could have a fight of him? For otherwise, you know, cousin, she may contrive to see him here without my knowledge.' Mrs. Fitzpatrick answered, that he had threatened her with another visit that afternoon; and that if her ladyship pleased to do her the honour of calling upon her then, the would hardly fail of feeing him between fix and feven; and if he came earlier, the would by some means or other detain him till her ladyship's arrival. Lady Bellaston replied, the would come the moment the could get from dinner, which the supposed would be by seven at farthest; for that it was absolutely necessary, she should be acquainted with his person. 'Upon my word, Madam, fays the, it was very good to take this care of Mils Weftern; but common humanity, as well as regard to our family, requires it of us both; for it would be a dreadful match indeed.'

Mrs. Fitzpatrick failed not to make a proper return

to the compliment which Lady Bellaston had bestowed on her cousin; and, after some little immaterial conversation, withdrew; and getting as fast as she could into her chair, unseen by Sophia or Honour, returned home.

CHAP. IV.

Which confifts of wisiting.

MR. JONES had walked within fight of a certain door during the whole day; which, though one of the shortest, appeared to him to be one of the longest in the whole year. At length the clock having struck five, he returned to Mrs. Fitzpatrick; who, though it was a full hour earlier than the decent time of visiting, received him very civilly; but still persisted in her ignorance con-

cerning Sophia.

y

1-

C-

e,

er

d

ſe

er

y

e

90

v,

1-

10

g

ne

y k

n. ht

Ly.

s. th

ip

n,

o; er

e-

m

t;

C-

n,

ef-

a-

ful

m

Jones, in asking for his angel, had dropped the word cousin; upon which Mrs. Fitzpatrick said—'Then, Sir, you know we are related; and as we are, you will permit me the right of inquiring into the particulars of your business with my cousin.' Here Jones hesitated a good while, and at last answered, he had a considerable sum of money of her's in his hands, which he desired to deliver to her. He then produced the pocket book, and acquainted Mrs. Fitzpatrick with the contents, and with the method in which they came into his hands. He had scarce finished his story, when a violent noise shook the whole house. To attempt to describe this noise to those who have heard it, would be in vain; and to aim at giving any idea of it to those who have never heard the like, would be still more vain: for it may be truly said—

----Non acuta
Sic geminant Corrybantes cera.

The priests of Cybelle do not so rattle their founding brass.

In short, a footman knocked, or rather thundered at the door. Jones was a little surprised at the sound, having never heard it before; but Mrs. Fitzpatrick very calmly said, that as some company were coming, she could not make him any answer now: but if he pleased to stay till they were gone, she intimated she had something to say to him.

B 2

The door of the room now flew open; and, after pushing in her hoop sideways before her, entered Lady Bellatton; who, having first made a very low curtiey to Mrs. Fitzpatrick, and as low a one to Mr. Jones, was ushered to the upper end of the room.

. We mention these minute matters for the sake of some country ladies of our acquaintance, who think it contrary to the rules of modelty to bend their knees to a

man.

The company were hardly well settled before the arrival of the peer lately mentioned caused a fresh disturb.

ance, and a repetition of ceremonials.

These being over, the conversation began to be (as the phrase is) extremely brilliant. However, as nothing passed in it which can be thought material to this history, or, indeed, very material in itself, I shall omit the relation; the rather, as I have known some very sine, polite conversation, grow extremely dull, when transcribed into books, or repeated on the stage. Indeed, this mental repast is a dainty, of which those who are excluded from polite assemblies, must be contented to remain as ignorant as they must of the several dainties of French cookery, which are served only at the tables of the great. To say the truth, as neither of these are adapted to every taste, they might both be often thrown away on the vulgar.

Poor Jones was rather a spectator of this elegant scene, than an actor in it; for though, in the short interval before the peer's arrival, Lady Bellaston first, and afterwards Mrs. Fitzpatrick, had addressed some of their discourse to him; yet no sooner was the noble lord entered, than he engrossed the whole attention of the two ladies to himself; and as he took no more notice of Jones than if no such person had been present, unless by now and then staring at him, his ladies followed the ex-

ample.

The company had now staid so long, that Mrs. Fitzpatrick plainly perceived they all designed to stay out each other. She therefore resolved to rid herself of Jones, he being the visitant to whom she thought the least ceremony was due. Taking therefore an opportunity of a cessation of chat, she addressed herself gravely to him, and said—'Sir, I shall not possibly be able to give you an answer to-night, as to that business: but if you please to leave word where I may send to you to-morrow—'

0

S

e

a

e

e

,

e

f

f

e

0

.

r

of

Jones had natural but not artificial good breeding. Instead, therefore, of communicating the secret of his lodgings to a servant, he acquainted the lady herself with it particularly, and soon after very ceremoniously withdrew.

He was no sooner gone, than the great personages who had taken no notice of him present, began to take much notice of him in his absence; but if the reader hath already excused us from relating the more brilliant part of this conversation, he will surely be very ready to excuse the repetition of what may be called vulgar abuse: though perhaps it may be material to our history to mention an observation of Lady Bellaston, who took her leave in a few minutes after him; and then said to Mrs. Fitzpatrick, at her departure—'I am satisfied on the account of my cousin: she can be in no danger from this fellow.'

Our history shall follow the example of Lady Bellaston, and take leave of the present company, which was now reduced to two persons; between whom, as nothing passed which in the least concerns us or our readers, we shall not suffer ourselves to be diverted by it from matters which must seem of more consequence to all those who are at all interested in the affairs of our hero.

CHAP. V.

An Adventure which happened to Mr. Jones at his Lodgings; with some Account of a young Gentleman who lodged there, and of the Mistress of the House and her two Daughters.

THE next morning, as early as it was decent, Jones attended at Mrs. Fitzpatrick's door, where he was answered, that the lady was not at home; an answer which surprised him the more, as he had walked backwards and forwards in the street from break of day; and if she had gone out, he must have seen her. This answer, however, he was obliged to receive; and not on-

that day.

To be plain with the reader, the noble peer had, for fome reason or other, perhaps from a regard for the lady's honour, insisted that the should not see Mr. Jones (whom he looked on as a scrub) any more; and the lady had complied in making that promise, to which we

now fee her fo ftrictly adhere.

But as our gentle reader may possibly have a better opinion of the young gentleman than her ladyship, and may even have some concern, should it be apprehended that during this unhappy separation from Sophia, he took up his residence either at an inn, or in the street, we shall now give an account of his lodging, which was indeed in a very reputable house, and in a very good part of the town.

Mr. Jones, then, had often heard Mr. Allworthy mention the gentlewoman at whose house he used to lodge when he was in town. This person, who as Jones likewise knew, lived in Bond-Street, was the widow of a clergyman, and was left by him at his decease in possession of two daughters, and of a complete set of manu-

feript fermons.

Of these two daughters, Nancy, the elder, was now arrived at the age of seventeen; and Betty, the younger, at that of ten.

Hither Jones had dispatched Partridge, and in this house he was provided with a room for himself in the second floor, and with one for Partridge in the fourth.

The first sloor was inhabited by one of those young gentlemen who, in the last age, were called men of wit and pleasure, about town; and properly enough; for as men are usually denominated from their business or profession, so pleasure may be said to have been the only business or profession of those gentlemen to whom Fortune had made all useful occupations unnecessary. Playhouses, coffee-houses, and taverns, were the scenes of their rendezvous. Wit and humour were the entertainments of their looser hours; and love was the business of their more serious moments. Wine and the Muses con-

fpired to kindle the brightest slames in their breasts; nor did they only admire, but some were able to celebrate the beauty they admired, and all to judge of the merit

of fuch compositions.

Such, therefore, were properly called the men of wit" and pleasure: but I question whether the same appellation may with the same propriety be given to those young gentlemen of our times, who have the fame ambition to be distinguished for parts. Wit certainly they have nothing to do with. To give them their due, they foar a step higher than their predecessors, and may be called men of wildom and vertu: (take heed you do not read virtue.) Thus at an age when the gentlemen abovementioned employed their time in toasting the charms of a woman, or in making sonnets in her praise; in giving their opinion of a play at the theatre, or of a poem at. Will's or Button's; these gentlemen are considering of methods to bribe a corporation, or meditating speeches for the House of Commons, or rather for the magazines. But the science of gaming is that which above all others employs their thoughts.

These are the studies of their graver hours; while for their amusements they have the vast circle of connoisseurship, painting, music, statuary, and natural philosophy, or rather unnatural; which deals in the wonderful and knows nothing of Nature, except her monsters

and imperfections.

ŕ

S

e

-

of.

-

of.

1-

When Jones had spent the whole day in vain inquiries after Mrs. Fitzpatrick, he returned at last disconsolate to his apartment. Here, while he was venting his grief in private, he heard a violent uproar below stairs; and soon after a female voice begged him for Heaven's sake to come and prevent murder. Jones, who was never backward on any occasion to help the distressed, immediately ran down stairs; when stepping into the dining room, whence all the noise issued, he beheld the young gentleman of wisdom and versu, just before mentioned, pinned close to the wall by his footman, and a young woman standing by wringing her hands, and crying out—'He will be murdered, he will be murdered!' And

indeed the poor gentleman seemed in some danger of being choaked; when Jones slew hastily to his assistance, and secured him, just as he was breathing his last, from

the unmerciful clutches of the enemy.

Though the fellow had received many kicks and cuffs from the little gentleman, who had more spirit than strength, he made it a kind of scruple of conscience to strike his master, and would have contented himself with only choaking him; but towards Jones he bore no such respect: he no sooner, therefore, found himself a little roughly handled by his new antagonist, than he gave him one of those punches in the guts, which, though the spectators at Broughton's ampitheatre have such exquisite delight in seeing them, convey but very little pleasure in the feeling.

The lufty youth had no fooner received this blow, than he meditated a most grateful return: and now enfued a combat between Jones and the footman, which was very fierce, but short; for this fellow was no more able to contend with Jones, than his master had before

been to contend with him.

And now Fortune, according to her usual custom, reversed the face of affairs. The former victor lay breathless on the ground, and the vanquished gentleman had recovered breath enough to thank Mr. Jones for his seafonable assistance. He received likewise the hearty thanks of the young woman present, who was, indeed, no other than Miss Nancy, the eldest daughter of the house.

The footman having now recovered his legs, shook his head at Jones, and with a sagacious look cried—'Od—n'me, I'll have nothing more to do with you; you have been upon the stage, or I'm damnably mistaken!' and indeed we may forgive this his suspicion; for such was the agility and strength of our hero, that he was, perhaps, a match for one of the first-rate boxers, and could, with great ease, have beaten all the mussed *graduates of Mr. Broughton's school.

^{*} Left posterity should be puzzled by this spithet, I think

The master, foaming with wrath, ordered his man immediately to strip; to which the latter very readily agreed, on condition of receiving his wages. This condition was presently complied with, and the fellow

was discharged.

And now the young gentleman whose name was Nightingale, strenuously insisted, that his deliverer should take part of a bottle of wine with him; to which Jones, after much entreaty, consented; though more out of complaisance than inclination; for the uneasiness of his mind sitted him very little for conversation at this time. Miss Nancy, likewise, who was the only semale then in the house, her mamma and sister being both gone to the play, condescended to savour them with her company.

When the bottle and glasses were on the table, the gentleman began to relate the occasion of the preceding

disturbance.

e

0

n

h

5,

d

this accident, conclude, that I make a custom of striking my servants; for I assure you this is the first time I have been guilty of it in my remembrance; and I have passed by many provoking saults in this very sellow, before he could provoke me to this; but when you hear what hath happened this evening, you will, I believe, think me excusable. I happened to come home several hours before my usual time, when I found four gentlemen of the cloth at whist at my fire; and my Hoyle, Sir—my best Hoyle, which cost me a guinea, lying open on the proper to explain it by an advertisement which was published

N. B. Mr. Broughton proposes, with proper affistants, to open an academy at his house in the Hay-market, for the instruction of those who are willing to be initiated in the mystery of boxing; where the whole theory and practice of that truly British art, with all the various stops, blows, cross-buttocks, &c. incident to combatants, will be fully taught and explained; and that persons of quality and distinction may not be deterred from entering into a course of those lectures, they will be given with the utmost tenderness and regard to the delicacy of the frame and constitution of the pupil, for which reason mussless are provided, that will effectually secure them from the inconveniency of

black-eyes, broken jaws, and bloody-nofes.

table, with a quantity of porter spilt on one of the most material leaves of the whole book. This, you will allow, was provoking; but I said nothing till the rest of the honest company were gone, and then gave the fellow a gentle rebuke; who, instead of expressing any concern, made me a pert answer, that servants must have their diversions as well as other people; that he was forry for the accident which had happened to the book; but that feveral of his acquaintance had bought the same for a shilling, and that I might stop as much in his wages if I pleased. I now gave him a severer reprimand than before, when the rascal had the insolence to-In short. he imputed my early coming home to-In short, he cast a reflection—He mentioned the name of a young lady, in a manner-in fuch a manner that incenfed me beyond all patience; and, in my passion, I struck him.'

Jones answered, that he believed no person living would blame him. 'For my part, said he, I confess I should on the last mentioned provocation, have done the same

thing.'

Our company had not sat long, before they were joined by the mother and daughter, at their return from the play. And now they all spent a very chearful evening together; for all but Jones were heartily merry, and even he put on as much constrained mirth as possible. Indeed, half his natural flow of animal spirits, joined to the sweetness of his temper, was sufficient to make a most amiable companion; and notwithstanding the heaviness of his heart, so agreeable did he make himself on the present occasion, that, at their breaking up, the young gentleman earnestly desired his farther acquaintance. Miss Nancy was well pleased with him; and the widow quite charmed with her new lodger, invited him with the other, next morning to breakfast.

Jones on his part was no less satisfied. As for Miss Nancy, though a very little creature, she was extremely pretty; and the widow had all the charms which can adorn a woman near fifty. As she was one of the most innocent creatures in the world, so she was one of the most chearful. She never thought, nor spoke, nor wished

any ill; and had conftantly that defire of pleafing, which may be called the happiest of all defires, in this, that it scarce ever fails of attaining its ends, when not disgraced by affectation. In short, though her power was very small, she was in her heart one of the warmest friends. She had been a most affectionate wife, and was a most fond and tender mother.

As our history doth not, like a newspaper, give great characters to people who never were heard of before, nor will ever be heard of again, the reader may hence conclude, that this excellent woman will hereafter appear

to be of some importance in our history.

t

1

d

1

e

d

e

d

e.

to

is

he

ng

e.

W

th

is

ly

an

oft

oft ed Nor was Jones a little pleased with the young gentleman himself, whose wine he had been drinking. He thought he discerned in him much good sense, though a little too much tainted with town soppery: but what recommended him most to Jones, were some sentiments of great generosity and humanity, which occasionally dropped from him; and particularly many expressions of the highest disinterestedness in the affairs of love: on which subject the young gentleman delivered himself in a language which might have very well become an Arcadian shepherd of old, and which appeared very extraordinary when proceeding from the lips of a modern fine gentleman; but he was only one by imitation, and meant by nature for a much better character.

CHAP. VI.

What arrived while the Company were at Breakfast; with some Hints concerning the Government of Daughters.

Our company brought together in the morning the same good inclinations towards each other with which they had separated the evening before; but poor Jones was extremely disconsolate; for he had just received information from Partridge, that Mrs. Fitzpatrick had left her lodging, and that he could not learn whither she was gone. This news highly afflicted him; and his countenance, as well as his behaviour, in defiance of all his endeavours to the contrary, betrayed manifest indications of a disordered mind.

The discourse turned at present, as before, on love; and Mr. Nightingale again expressed many of those warm, generous, and disinterested sentiments, upon this subject, which wise and sober men call romantic; but which wise and sober women generally regard in a better light. Mrs. Miller (for so the mistress of the house was called) greatly approved these sentiments; but when the young gentleman appealed to Miss Nancy, she answered only, that she believed the gentleman who had spoke the least was capable of feeling the most.

This compliment was so apparently directed to Jones, that we should have been forry had he passed it by unregarded. He made her, indeed, a very polite answer; and concluded with an oblique hint, that her own silence subjected her to a suspicion of the same kind; for indeed she had scarce opened her lips either now or the last

evening.

'I am glad, Nancy, fays Mrs. Miller, the gentleman hath made the observation: I protest I am almost of his opinion. What can be the matter with you, child? I never saw such an alteration. What is become of all your gaiety?—Would you think, Sir, I used to call her my little prattler? She hath not spoke twenty words this week.'

Here their conversation was interrupted by the entrance of a maid-servant, who brought a bundle in her hands, which, she said, was delivered by a porter for Mr. Jones. She added, that the man immediately went away, say-

ing, it required no answer.

Jones expressed some surprise on this occasion, and declared it must be some mistake: but the maid persisting that she was certain of the name, all the women were desirous of having the bundle immediately opened; which operation was at length performed by little Betsey, with the consent of Mr. Jones; and the contents were sound to be, a domino, a mask, and a masquerade ticket.

Jones was now more positive than ever, in asserting, that these things must have been delivered by mistake; and Mrs. Miller herself expressed some doubt, and said, she knew not what to think. But when Mr. Nightin-

gale was asked, he delivered a very different opinion. All I can conclude from it, Sir, said he, is, that you are a very happy man; for I make no doubt but thefe were fent you by some lady whom you will have the hap-

pinels of meeting at the masquerade.'

Jones had not a sufficient degree of vanity to entertain any fuch flattering imagination; nor did Mrs. Miller herself give much affent to what Mr. Nightingale had faid, till Mifs Nancy, having lifted up the domino, a card dropt from the fleeve, in which was written as follows-

> TO MR. JONES. The Queen of the Fairies fends you this: Use her favours not amiss.

Mrs. Miller and Miss Nancy now both agreed with Mr. Nightingale: nay, Jones himself was almost perfuaded to be of the same opinion. And as no other lady but Mrs. Fitzpatrick, he thought, knew his lodgings, he began to flatter himself with some hopes that it came from her, and that he might possibly fee his Sophia. These hopes had furely very little foundation; but as the conduct of Mrs. Fitzpatrick, in not feeing him according to her promise, and in quitting her lodgings, had been very odd and unaccountable, he conceived some faint hopes, that she (of whom he had formerly heard a very whimfical character) might possibly intend to do him that service in a strange manner, which she declined doing by more ordinary methods. To fay the truth, as nothing certain could be concluded from fo odd and uncommon an incident, he had the greater latitude to draw what imagimary conclusions from it he pleased. As his temper, therefore, was naturally fanguine, he indulged it on this occasion; and his imagination worked up a thousand conceits, to favour and support his expectations of meeting his dear Sophia in the evening.

Reader, if thou hast any good wishes towards me, I will fully repay them, by wishing thee to be possessed of this fanguine disposition of mind: since, after having read much, and considered long on that subject of happiness which hath employed so many great pens, I am

Vol. III.

almost inclined to fix it in the possession of this temper; which put us, in a manner, out of the reach of Fortune, and makes us happy without her assistance. Indeed, the sensations of pleasure it gives are much more constant, as well as much keener, than those which that blind lady bestows; Nature having wisely contrived, that some satiety and langour should be annexed to all our real enjoyments, lest we should be so taken up by them, as to be stopt from faither pursuits. I make no manner of doubt, but that, in this light, we may see the imaginary suture chancellor just called to the bar, the archbishop in crape, and the prime minister at the tail of an opposition, more truly happy than those who are invested with all the powers and profit of these respective offices.

Mr. Jones having now determined to go to the masquerade that evening, Mr. Nightingale offered to conduct him thither. The young gentleman, at the same time, offered tickets to Miss Nancy and her mother; but the good woman would not accept them. She faid, she did not conceive the harm which some people imagined in a masquerade; but that such extravagant diversions were proper only for persons of quality and fortune, and not for young women who were to get their living; and could, at best, hope to be married to a good tradesman. A tradefman! cries Nightingale; you shan't undervalue my Nancy. There is not a nobleman upon earth above her merit.'- O fie! Mr. Nightingale, answered Mrs. Miller, you must not fill the girl's head with such fancies: but if it was her good luck (fays the mother with a fimper) to find a gentleman of your generous way of thinking, I hope the would make a better return to his generolity, than to give her mind up to extravagant pleafures. Indeed, where young ladies bring great fortunes themselves, they have some right to insist on spending what is their own; and on that account, I have heard the gentlemen fay, a man has fometimes a better bargain with a poor wife, than with a rich one. But let my daughters marry whom they will, I shall endeayour to make them bleffings to their husbands. I beg, therefore, I may hear of no more masquerades. Nancy is, I am certain, too good a girl to desire to go: for she must remember when you carried her thither last year, it almost turned her head; and she did not return to herself, or to her needle, in a month afterwards.

Though a gentle figh, which stole from the bosom of Nancy, seemed to argue some secret disapprobation of these sentiments, she did not dare openly to oppose them. For as this good woman had all the tenderness, so she had preserved all the authority, of a parent: and as her indulgence to the desires of her children was restrained only by her sears for their safety and suture welfare, so she never suffered those commands which proceeded from such fears to be either disobeyed or disputed: and this the young gentleman, who had lodged two years in the house, knew so well, that he presently acquiesced in the resusal.

Mr. Nightingale, who grew every minute fonder of Jones, was very desirous of his company that day to dinner at the tavern, where he offered to introduce him to some of his acquaintance; but Jones begged to be excused, as his cloaths, he said, were not yet come to town.

To confess the truth, Mr. Jones was now in a situation which sometimes happens to be the case of young gentlemen of much better figure than himself. In short, he had not one penny in his pocket; a situation in much greater credit among the ancient philosophers, than among the modern wise men who live in Lombard-street, or those who frequent White's chocolate-house; and, perhaps, the great honours which those philosophers have ascribed to an empty pocket, may be one of the reasons of that high contempt in which they are held in the aforesaid street and chocolate-house.

Now if the ancient opinion, that men might live very comfortably on virtue only, be, as the modern wife men just above mentioned pretend to have discovered, a notorious error; no less false is, I apprehend, that position of some writers of romance, that a man may live altogether on love: for, however delicious repasts this may afford to

fome of our senses or appetites, it is most certain it can afford none to others. Those, therefore, who have placed too great a confidence in such writers, have experienced their error when it was too late; and have found that love was no more capable of allaying hunger, than a rose is capable of delighting the ear, or a violin of gratifying the smell.

Notwithstanding, therefore, all the delicacies which love had set before him, namely, the hopes of seeing Sophia at the masquerade; on which, however ill-founded his imagination might be, he had voluptuously feasted the whole day, the evening no sooner came than Mr. Jones began to languish for some food of a grosser kind. Partridge discovered this by intuition, and took the occasion to give some oblique hints concerning the bank-bill, and when these were rejected with disdain, he collected courage enough once more to mention a return to Mr. All-worthy.

'Partridge, cries Jones, you cannot see my fortune in a more desperate light than I see myself: and I begin heartily to repent, that I suffered you to leave a place where you was settled, and to follow me. However, I insist now on your reurning home; and for the expence and trouble which you have so kindly put yourself to on my account, all the cloths I lest behind in your care, I defire you would take as your own. I am forry I can

make you no other acknowledgment.

He spoke these words with so pathetic an accent, that Partridge, among whose vices ill-nature or hardness of heart were not numbered, burst into tears; and after swearing he would not quit him in his distress, he began with the most earnest entreaties to urge his return home. For Heaven's sake, Sir, says he, do but consider! what can your honour do! How is it possible you can live in this town without money? Do what you will, Sir, or go wherever you please, I am resolved not to defert you. But, pray, Sir, consider!—do pray, Sir, for your own sake, take it into your consideration; and I am sure, says he that your own good sense will bid you return home.

How often shall I tell thee, answered Jones, that I have no home to return to? Had I any hopes that Mr. Allworthy's door would be open to receive me, I want no distress to urge me. Nay, there is no other cause upno earth which would detain me a moment from flying to his presence; but, alas! that I am for ever banished from. His last words were-O Partridge, they still ring in my ears-his last words were, when he gave me a fum of money, what it was I know not, but confider. able I am fure it was-his last words were " I am resolv= ed from this day forward, on no account, to converse with you any more!"

Here passion stopt the mouth of Jones, as surprise, for a moment, did that of Partridge: but he foon recovered the use of speech, and, after a short preface, in which he declared he had no inquisitiveness in his temper, inquired what Jones meant by a confiderable fum. he knew not how much; and what was become of the money.

In both these points he now received full satisfactions; on which he was proceeding to comment, when he was interrupted by a message from Mr. Nightingale, who

defired his mafter's company in his apartment.

When the two gentlemen were both attired for the mafquerade, and Mr. Nightingale had given orders for chairs to be sent for, a circumstance of distress occurred to Jones, which will appear very ridiculous to many of my readers. This was how to procure a shilling: but if fuch readers with reflect a little on what they have themselves felt from the want of a thousand pounds (or, perhaps, of ten or twenty) to execute a favourite scheme, they will have a perfect idea of what Mr. Jones felt on this occasion. For this sum, therefore, he applied to Partridge, which was the first he had permitted him to advance, and was the last he intended that poor fellow should advance in his service. To say the truth, Partridge had lately made no offer of this kind; whether it was, that he defired to fee the bank-bill broke in upon, or that diffres should prevail on Jones to return home, or from what other motive it proceeded, I will not determine.

Our cavaliers now arrived at that temple where Heydegger, the great Arbiter Deliciarum, the great high-priest of pleasure, presides; and, like other heathen priests, imposes on his votaries by the pretended pre-

Mr. Nightingale having taken a turn or two with his companion, foon left him, and walked off with a female. faying, 'Now you are here, Sir, you must beat about for

sence of the deity, when in reality no such deity is there.

your own game.'

Jones began to entertain firong hopes that his Sophia was present; and these hopes gave him more spirit than the lights, the music, and the company; though these are pretty strong antidotes against the spleen. He now accofted every woman he faw, whose stature, shape, or air, bore any resemblance to his angel. To all of whom he endeavoured to fay fomething fmart, in order to engage an answer, by which he might discover that voice which he thought it impossible he should mistake. Some of these answered by a question, in a squeaking voice-'Do you know me?' Much the greater number faid- I don't know you, Sir!' and nothing more. Some called him an impertinent fellow; some made him no answer at all; fome faid- Indeed, I don't know your voice, and I shall have nothing to fay to you!' and many gave him as kind answers as he could wish, but none in the voice be defired to hear.

Whilst he was talking with one of these last (who was in the habit of a shepherdess) a lady in a domino came up to him, and slapping him on the shoulder, whispered him at the same time in the ear—' If you talk any longer with that trollop, I will acquaint Miss Western.'

Jones no sooner heard that name, than, immediately quitting his former companion, he applied to the domino, begging and entreating her to shew him the lady she had

mentioned, if the was then in the room.

The masque walked hastily to the upper end of the innermost apartment before she spoke; and then, instead of answering him, sat down, and declared she was tired. Jones sat down by her, and still persisted in his entreaties. At last the lady coldly answered—'I imagined Mr. Jones had been a more discerning lover, than to suffer any disguise to conceal his mistress from him.'—'Is she here then, Madam?' replied Jones, with some vehemency. Upon which the lady cried—'Hush, Sir! you will be observed. I promise you, upon my honour, Miss Western is not here.'

Jones'now, taking the masque by the hand, sell to entreating her in the most earnest manner to acquaint him where he might find Sophia; and when he could obtain no direct answer, he began to upbraid her gently for having disappointed him the day before; and concluded, saying,— Indeed my good fairy queen, I know your majesty very well, notwithstanding the affected disguise of your voice. Indeed, Mrs. Fitzpatrick, it is a little cruel to divert yourself at the expence of my torments.

The masque answered 'Though you have so ingenioully discovered me, I must still speak in the same voice, lest I should be known by others. And do you think, good Sir, that I have no greater regard for my cousin, than to affist in carrying on an affair between you two, which must end in her ruin, as well as your own? Besides, I promise you, my cousin is not mad enough to consent to her own destruction, if you are so much her enemy as to tempt her to it.'

' Alas, Madam, faid Jones, you little know my

heart, when you call me an enemy of Sophia!'

And yet to ruin any one, cries the other, you will allow, is the act of an enemy: and when, by the same act, you must knowingly and certainly bring ruin on yourself, is it not folly or madness, as well as guilt? Now, Sir, my cousin hath very little more than her father will please to give her; very little for one of her fashion—You know him, and you own your own fituation.

Jones vowed he had no such design on Sophia; that he would rather suffer the most violent of deaths than sacrifice her interest to his desires. He said he knew how unworthy he was of her every way; that he had long ago

resolved to quit all such aspiring thoughts, but that some strange accidents had made him desirous to see her once more, when he promised he would take leave of her for ever. 'No, Madam, concluded he, my love is not of that base kind, which seeks its own satisfaction at the expence of what is most dear to its object. I will sacrifice every thing to the possession of my Sophia, but Sophia herself.'

Though the reader may have already conceived no very sublime idea of the virtue of the lady in the mask, and though possibly she may hereafter appear not to deserve one of the first characters of her sex, yet, it is certain, these generous sentiments made a strong impression upon her, and greatly added to the affection she had before

conceived for our young hero.

The lady now, after a filence of a few moments, faid, she did not see his pretensions to Sophia so much in the light of presumption as of imprudence. 'Young fellows,' says she, 'can never have too aspiring thoughts: I love ambition in a young man, and I would have you cultivate it as much as possible. Perhaps you may succeed with those who are infinitely superior in fortune; nay, I am convinced there are women—But don't you think me a strange creature, Mr. Jones, to be thus giving advice to a man with whom I am so little acquainted, and one with whose behaviour to me I have so little reason to be pleased?'

Here Jones began to apologize, and to hope he had not offended in any thing he had faid of her cousin. To which the masque answered—' And are you so little versed in the sex, to imagine you can well affront a lady more, than by entertaining her with your passion for another woman? If the sairy queen had conceived no better opinion of your gallantry, she would scarce have appointed you

to meet her at a masquerade.'

Jones had never less inclination to an amour than at present: but gallantry to the ladies was among his principles of honour; and he held it as much incumbent on him to accept a challenge to love, as if it had been a challenge to fight. Nay, his very love to Sophia made it ness

cessary for him to keep well with the lady, as he made no doubt but she was capable of bringing him into the

presence of the other.

He began, therefore, to make a very warm answer to her last speech, when a masque, in the character of an old woman, joined them. This masque was one of those ladies who go to a masquerade only to vent ill-nature, by telling people rude truths; and by endeavouring, as the phrase is, to spoil as much sport as they are able. This good lady, therefore, having observed Jones and his friend, whom she well knew, in close consultation together in a corner of the room, concluded she could nowhere satisfy her spleen better than by interrupting them. She attacked them, therefore, and soon drove them from their retirement: nor was she contented with this, but pursued them to every place to which they shifted to avoid her; till Mr. Nightingale, seeing the distress of his friend, at last relieved him, and engaged the old woman

in another pursuit.

While Jones and his masque were walking together about the room to rid themselves of the teazer, he obferved his lady speak to several masques with the same freedom of acquaintance as if they had been bare-faced. He could not help expressing his surprise at this, saying, Sure, Madam, you must have infinite discernment, to know people in all difguifes.' To which the lady anfwered, 'You cannot conceive any thing more infipid and childish than a masquerade to the people of fashion, who in general know one another as well here as when they meet in an affembly or a drawing-room; nor will any woman of condition converse with a person with whom she is not acquainted. In short, the generality of persons whom you see here, may more properly be faid to kill time in this place than in any other; and generally retire from hence more tired than from the longest sermon. To say the truth, I begin to be in that fituation myself; and if I have any faculty at guesting, you are not much better pleased. I protest it would be almost charity in me to go home for your fake."- I know but one charity equal to it, cries Jones; and that

is, to fuffer me to wait on you home.'- Sure, answered the lady, you have a frange opinion of me, to imagine that, upon fuch an acquaintance, I would let you into my doors at this time o'night. I fancy you impute the friendship I have shewn my cousin to some other motive. Confess, honestly; don't you conceive this contrived interview as little better than a downright affignation ?-Are you used, Mr. Jones, to make these sudden conquests?'- I am not used, Madam, said Jones, to submit to such sudden conquests; but as you have taken my heart by surprise, the rest of my body hath a right to follow; so you must pardon me, if I resolve to attend you wherever you go.' He accompanied these words with some proper actions; upon which the lady, after a gentle rebuke, and faying their familiarity would be obferved, told him, the was going to fup with an acquaintance, whither, she hoped, he would not follow her; for if you should, said she, I should be thought an unaccountable creature; though my friend, indeed, is not censorious; yet I hope you won't follow me: I protest, I shall not know what to fay, if you do.'

The lady presently after quitted the masquerade; and Jones, notwithstanding the severe prohibition he had received, presumed to attend her. He was now reduced to the same dilemma we have mentioned before, namely, the want of a shilling, and could not relieve it by borrowing, as before. He therefore walked boldly on after the chair in which the lady rode, pursued by a grand huzza from all the chairmen present, who wisely take the best care they can to discountenance all walking a-soot by their betters. Luckily, however, the gentry who attend at the opera-house were too busy to quit their stations; and as the lateness of the hour prevented him from meeting many of their brethren in the street, he proceeded without molestation, in a dress which, at another season, would have certainly raised a mob at his

heels.

The lady was fet down in a street not far from Hanover-square: where the door being presently opened, she was carried in ; and the gentleman, without any cere-

mony, walked in after her.

Jones and his companion were now in a very well furnished and well warmed room, when the semale still speaking in her masquerade voice, said, she was surprised at her friend, who must absolutely have forgot her appointment; at which, after venting much resentment, she suddenly expressed some apprehension from Jones, and asked him what the world would think of their having been alone together in a house at that time of night? But instead of a direct answer to so important a question, Jones began to be very importunate with the lady to unmask; and at length having prevailed, there appeared not Mrs. Fitzpatrick, but the Lady Bellaston herself.

It would be tedious to give the particular conversation, which consisted of very common and ordinary occurrences, and which lasted from two till six o'clock in the morning. It is sufficient to mention all of it that is any wise material to this history. And this was a promise, that the lady would endeavour to find out Sophia, and in a few days bring him to an interview with her, on condition he would then take his leave of her. When this was thoroughly settled, and a second meeting in the evening appointed, at the same place, they separated: the lady returned to her house, and Jones to his lodg-

ings.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing a Scene of Distress, which will appear very extraordinary to most of our Readers.

JONES having refreshed himself with a few hours sleep, summoned Partridge to his presence; and delivering him a bank note of fifty pounds, ordered him to go and change it. Partridge received this with sparkling eyes; though, when he came to reslect farther, it raised in him some suspicions not very advantageous to the honour of his master; to these, the dreadful idea he had of the masquerade, the disguise in which his master had gone out and returned, and his having been abroad all night, contributed. In plain language, the only way he could possibly find to account for the

possession of this note, was by robbery; and, to confess the truth, the reader, unless he should suspect it was owing to the generosity of Lady Bellaston, can hardly

imagine any other.

To clear, therefore, the honour of Mr. Jones, and to do justice to the liberality of the lady, he had really received this present from her; who, though she did not give much into the hackneyed charities of the age, such as building hospitals, &c. was not, however, entirely void of that christian virtue; and conceived (very rightly, I think) that a young fellow of merit, without a shilling in the world, was no improper object of this virtue.

Mr. Jones and Mr. Nightingale had been invited to dine this day with Mrs. Miller. At the appointed hour, therefore, the two young gentlemen, with the two girls, attended in the parlour, where they waited from three till almost five before the good woman appeared. She had been out of town to visit a relation; of whom, at

her return, the gave the following account.

I hope, gentlemen, you will pardon my making you wait; I am fure, if you knew the occasion-I have been to see a cousin of mine, about six miles off, who now lies in. It would be a warning to all persons (fays the looking at her daughters) how they marry indiscreetly. There is no happiness in this world without a competency. O Nancy! how shall I describe the wretched condition in which I found your poor coufin! She hath fearcely laid-in a week; and there was she, this dreadful weather, in a cold room, without any curtains to her bed, and not a bushel of coals in her house to supply her with fire. Her second son, that sweet little fellow, lies ill of a quinzy in the same bed with his mother; for there is no other bed in the house, Poor little Tommy! I believe, Nancy, you will never fee your favourite any more; for he is really very ill. The reft of the children are in pretty good health; but Molly, I am afraid, will do herself an injury—the is but thirteen years old, Mr. Nightingale, and yet in my life, I never faw a better nurse: she attends both her mother

and her brother; and what is wonderful in a creature fo young, the shews all the cheerfulness in the world to her mother; and yet I saw her-I saw the poor child, Mr. Nightingale, turn about, and privately wipe the tears from her eyes.' Here Mrs. Miller was prevented, by her own tears, from going on; and there was not, I believe, a person present who did not accompany her in them: at length she a little recovered herself, and proceeded thus: 'In all this distress, the mother supports her spirits in a surprising manner. The danger of her fon fits heaviest upon her; and yet she endeavours as much as possible to conceal even this concern, on her husband's account. Her grief, however, sometimes gets the better of all her endeavours; for the was always extravagantly fond of this boy; and a most fenfible, sweet-tempered creature it is. I protest, I was never more affected in my life, than when I heard the little wretch, who is hardly yet feven years old, while his mother was wetting him with her tears, beg her to be comforted.'-" Indeed, mamma, cried the child, I fhan't'die: God Almighty, I'm fure, won't take Tommy away: let heaven be ever so fine a place, I had rather flay here, and starve with you and my papa, than go to it. "- ' Pardon me, gentlemen, I can't help it, (fays fhe, wiping her eyes;) fuch fensibility and affection in a child -and yet, perhaps, he is the least object of pity; for a day or two will, most probably, place him beyond the reach of all human evils. The father is, indeed, most worthy of compassion. Poor man! his countenance is the very picture of horror, and he looks rather like one dead than alive. Oh, Heaven! what a scene did I behold at my first coming into the room! The good creature was lying behind the bolfter, supporting at once both his child and his wife. He had nothing on but athin waistcoat, for his coat was spread over the bed, to supply the want of blankets. When he rose up, at my entrance, I scarce knew him. As comely a man, Mr. Jones, within this fortnight, as you ever beheld: Mr. Nightingale hath feen him. His eyes funk, his face pale, with a long beard. His body fhivering with cold, VOL. III.

and worn with hunger too; for my cousin says, she can hardly prevail upon him to eat. He told me himself in a whisper—he told me—I can't repeat it—he said, he could not bear to eat the bread his children wanted. And yet! can you believe it, gentlemen? in all this misery, his wise has as good caudle as if she lay in in the midst of the greatest affluence; I tasted it, and I scarce ever tasted better. The means of procuring her this, he said, he believed was sent him by an angel from heaven. I know not what he meant; for I had not spi-

rits enough to ask a fingle question.

'This was a love match, as they call it, on both fides; that is, a match between two beggars. I must, indeed, say, I never saw a fonder couple. But what is their fondness good for, but to torment each other?" - Indeed, mamma, cries Nancy, I have always looked on my coufin Anderson (for that was her name) as one of the happieft of women.'- 'I am fure, fays Mrs. Miller, the case at present is much otherwise; for any one might have discerned that the tender consideration of each other's fufferings, makes the most intolerable part of their calamity both to the husband and the wife. Compared to which, hunger and cold, as they affect their own perfons only, are scarce evils. Nay, the very children, the youngest, which is not two years old, excepted, feel in the fame manner; for they are a most loving family; and if they had but a bare competency, would be the happieft people in the world.'- I never faw the least fign of mifery at her house, replied Nancy. I am sure my heart bleeds for what you now tell me. - O, child, answered the mother, she hath always endeavoured to make the best of every thing. They have always been in great diffres; but, indeed, this absolute ruin hath been brought upon them by others. The poor man was bail for the villain his brother; and about a week ago, the very day before her lying-in, their goods were all carried away, and fold by an execution. He fent a letter to me of it by one of the bailiffs, which the villain never delivered. What must he think of my suffering a week to pass before he heard of me?"

It was not with dry eyes that Jones heard this narrative: when this was ended, he took Mrs. Miller apart with him into another room, and delivering her his purfe, in which was the fum of fifty pounds, defired her to fend as much of it as the thought proper to these poor people. The look which Mrs. Miller gave Jones on this occafion is not easily to be described. She burst into a kind of agony of transport, and cried out, ' Good Heavens! is there fuch a man in the world?' But recollecting herself, she said, Indeed, I know one such; but can there be another?'- 'I hope, Madam, cries Jones, there are many who have common humanity: for to relieve fuch distresses in our fellow-creatures, can hardly be called more.' Mrs. Miller then took ten guineas, which were the utmost he could prevail with her to accept, and said, the would find some means of conveying them early the next morning; adding, that she had herself done some little matter for the poor people, and had not left them in quite so much misery as she found them.

They then returned to the parlour, where Nightingale expressed much concern at the dreadful situation of those wretches; whom, indeed, he knew; for he had seen them more than once at Mrs. Miller's. He inveighed against the folly of making one's self liable for the debts of others; vented many bitter execrations against the brother; and concluded with wishing something could be done for the unfortunate family. Suppose, Madam, said he, you should recommend them to Mr. Allworthy? Or what think you of a collection? I will give him a gui-

nea with all my heart.'

Mrs. Miller made no answer; and Nancy, to whom her mother had whispered the generosity of Jones, turned pale upon the occasion; though, if either of them was angry with Nightingale, it was surely without reason. For the liberality of Jones, if he had know it, was not an example which he had any obligation to follow; and there are thousands who would not have contributed a single halfpenny; as indeed he did not in effect; for he made no tender of any thing; and therefore, as the

others thought proper to make no demand, he kept his

money in his pocket.

I have in truth observed, and shall never have a better opportunity than at present to communicate my obfervation, that the world are in general divided into two opinions concerning charity, which are the very reverse of each other. One party feems to hold, that all acts of this kind are to be esteemed as voluntary gifts; and however little you give, (if, indeed, no more than your good wishes,) you acquire a great degree of merit in so doing. Others, on the contrary, appear to be as firmly persuaded, that beneficence is a positive duty; and that whenever the rich fall greatly short of their ability in relieving the diffresses of the poor, their pitiful largesses are so far from being meritorious, that they have only performed their duty by halves, and are in some sense more contemptible than those who have entirely neglected it.

To reconcile these different opinions, is not in my power. I shall only add, that the givers are generally of the former sentiment, and the receivers are almost universally inclined to the latter.

CHAP. IX.

Which treats of Matters of a very different Kind from

those in the preceding Chapter.

In the evening Jones met his lady again, and a long conversation again ensued between them; but as it consisted only of the same ordinary occurrences as before, we shall avoid mentioning particulars, which we despair of rendering agreeeble to the reader; unless he is one whose devotion to the fair-sex, like that of the papists to their saints, wants to be raised by the help of pictures. But I am so far from desiring to exhibit such pictures to the public, that I wish to draw a curtain over those that have been lately set forth in certain French novels; very bungling copies of which have been presented us here, under the name of translations.

Jones grew more and more impatient to fee Sophia; and finding, after repeated interviews with lady Bellaston, no likelihood of obtaining this by her means,

(for, on the contrary, the lady began to treat even the name of Sophia with refentment,) he resolved to try some other method. He made no doubt but that Lady Bellaston knew where his angel was; so he thought it most likely that some of her servants should be acquainted with the same secret. Partridge, therefore, was employed to get acquainted with those servants, in order to fish this secret out of them.

Few fituations can be imagined more uneafy than that to which his poor mafter was at present reduced; for, besides the distincties he met with in discovering Sophia, besides the sears he had of having disobliged her, and the assurances he had received from Lady Bellaston of the resolution which Sophia had taken against him, and of her having purposely concealed herself from him, which he had sufficient reason to believe might be true; he had still a difficulty to combat, which it was not in the power of his mistress to remove, however kind her inclination might have been. This was, the exposing of her to be disinherited of all her father's estate, the almost inevitable consequence of their coming together without a consent which he had no hopes of ever obtaining.

Add to all these, the many obligations which Lady Bellaston, whose violent fondness we can no longer conceal, had heaped upon him; so that by her means he was now become one of the best dressed men about town; and was not only relieved from those ridiculous distresses we have before mentioned, but was actually raised to a state of affluence beyond what he had ever known.

Now, though there are many gentlemen who very well reconcile it to their consciences to possess themselves of the whole fortune of a woman, without making her any kind of return, yet to a mind, the proprietor of which doth not deserve to be hanged, nothing is, I believe, more irksome, than to support love with gratitude only; especially where inclination pulls the heart a contrary way. Such was the unhappy case of Jones; for though the virtuous love he bore to Sophia, and which left very little affection for any other woman, had been entirely out of the question, he could never have been able to

D 3

have made an adequate return to the generous paffion of this lady; who had, indeed, been once an object of defire; but was now entered at least into the autumn of life; though she wore all the gaiety of youth, both in her dress and manner: nay, she contrived still to maintain the roses in her cheeks; but these, like flowers forced out of season by art, had none of that lively, blooming freshness, with which Nature, at the proper time, bedecks her own productions. She had, besides, a certain imperfection, which renders some flowers, though very beautiful to the eye, very improper to be placed in a wilderness of sweets; and what, above all others, is

most disagreeable to the breath of love.

Though Jones saw all these discouragements on the one fide, he felt his obligations full as ftrongly on the other; nor did he less plainly discern the ardent passion whence those obligations proceeded; the extreme violence of which, if he failed to equal, he well knew the lady would think him ungrateful; and, what is worse, he would have thought himself so. He knew the tacit confideration upon which all her favours were conferred; and as his necessity obliged him to accept them, so his honour, he concluded, forced him to pay the price. This, therefore, he resolved to do, whatever misery it cost him; and to devote himself to her, from that great principle of justice, by which the laws of some countries oblige a debtor, who is no otherwise capable of discharging his debt, to become the flave of his creditor.

While he was meditating on these matters, he received

the following note from the lady:

A very foolish, but a very perverse accident hath happened fince our last meeting, which makes it improper I should see you any more at the usual place. I will, if possible, contrive some other place by to-mor-

' row. In the mean time, adieu.'

This disappointment, perhaps, the reader may conclude was not very great; but if it was, he was quickly relieved: for in less than an hour afterwards, another note was brought him from the same hand, which contained as fellows:

I have altered my mind fince I wrote; a change which, if you are no stranger to the tenderest of all passions, you will not wonder at. I am now resolved to see you this evening, at my own house, whatever may be the consequence. Come to me exactly at seven: I dine abroad; but will be at home by that time. A day, I find, to those that sincerely love, seems longer than I imagined.

· If you should accidentally be a few moments before

me, bid them fhew you into the drawing-room.

To confess the truth, Jones was less pleased with this last epistle than he had been with the former; as he was prevented by it from complying with the earnest entreaties of Mr. Nightingale, with whom he had now contracted much intimacy and friendship. These entreaties were to go with that young gentleman and his company to a new play, which was to be acted that evening, and which a very large party had agreed to damn, from some dislike they had taken to the author, who was a friend to one of Mr. Nightingale's acquaintance. And this sort of fun, our hero, we are ashamed to confess, would willingly have preferred to the above kind appointment; but his honour got the better of his inclination.

Before we attend him to this intended interview with the lady, we think proper to account for both the preceding notes; as the reader may possibly be not a little surprised at the imprudence of Lady Bellaston, in bringing her lover to the very house where her rival was

lodged.

First, then, the mistress of the house where these lovers had hitherto met, and who had been for some years a pensioner to that lady, was now become a methodist, and had that very morning waited upon her ladyship; and, after rebuking her very severely for her past life, had positively declared, that she would, on no account, be instrumental in carrying on any of her affairs for the future.

The hurry of spirits into which this accident threw the lady, made her despair of possibly finding any other convenience to meet Jones that evening: but as she began a little to recover from her uneafiness at the disappointment, she set her thoughts to work; when luckily it came into her head to propose to Sophia to go to the play, which was immediately consented to, and a proper lady provided for her companion. Mrs. Honour was likewise dispatched by Mrs. Etoff on the same errand of pleasure, and thus her own house was left free for the safe reception of Mr. Jones, with whom she promised herself two or three hours uninterrupted conversation, after her return from the place where she dined; which was in a friend's house in a pretty distant part of the town, near her old place of assignation, where she had engaged herself before she was well apprized of the revolution that had happened in the mind and morals of her late considents.

CHAP. X.

A Chapter which, though short, may draw Tears from some Eyes.

MR. Jones was just dreffed to wait on Lady Bellaston, when Mrs. Miller rapped at the door: and being admitted, very earnestly desired his company below stairs

to drink tea in the parlour.

Upon his entrance into the room, she presently introduced a person to him; saying, 'This, Sir, is my cousin, who hath been so greatly beholden to your goodness; for which he begs to return you his sincerest thanks.'

The man had scarce entered upon that speech, which Mrs. Miller had so kindly prefaced, when both Jones and he, looking stedfastly at each other, shewed at once the utmost tokens of surprise. The voice of the latter began instantly to faulter; and, instead of finishing his speech, he sunk down into a chair, crying—'It is so! I am convinced it is so!'

Bless me! what's the meaning of this? cries Mrs. Miller: you are not ill, I hope, cousin? Some water! a

dram this instant!'

Be not frighted, Madam, cries Jones; I have almost as much need of a dram as your cousin. We are equally surprised at this unexpected meeting. Your cousin is an acquaintance of mine, Mrs. Miller.

An acquaintance! cries the man, O Heaven!'

Aye, an acquaintance, repeated Jones, and an honoured acquaintance too. When I do not love and honour the man who dares venture every thing to preferve his wife and children from instant destruction, may I have a friend capable of disowning me in adversity!

'O you are an excellent young man! cries Mrs. Miller. Yes, indeed, poor creature! he hath ventured every thing: if he had not had one of the best of constitutions,

it must have killed him.'

*Cousin, cries the man, who had now pretty well recovered himself, this is the angel from heaven whom I
meant. This is he to whom, before I saw you, I owed
the preservation of my Peggy. He it was to whose generosity every comfert, every support which I have procured for her, was owing. He is, indeed, the worthiest,
bravest, noblest, of all human beings. O, cousin, I have
obligations to this gentleman of such a nature!

'Mention nothing of obligations, cries Jones eagerly; not a word! I infift upon it, not a word! (Meaning, I suppose, that he would not have him betray the affair of the robbery to any person.) If, by the trifle you have received from me, I have preserved a whole family, sure

pleasure was never bought so cheap.'

'O Sir! cries the man, I wish you could this instant fee my house. If any person had ever a right to the pleafure you mention, I am convinced it is yourfelf. My cousin tells me she acquainted you with the distress in which she found us. That, Sir, is all greatly removed, and chiefly by your goodness. My children have now a bed to lie on, and they have --- they have --- eternal bleffings reward you for it --- they have bread to eat! My little boy is recovered, my wife is out of danger, and I am happy. All, all owing to you, Sir; and to my cousin here, one of the best of women. Indeed, Sir, I must see you at my house. Indeed my wife must see you, and thank you. My children too must express their gratitude. Indeed, Sir, they are not without a fense of their obligation; but what is my feeling, when I reflect to whom I owe, that they are now capable of expreffing their gratitude! Oh, Sir! the little hearts which you have warmed, had now been cold as ice without your affiftance!'

Here Jones attempted to prevent the poor man from proceeding; but, indeed, the overflowing of his own heart would of itself have stopped his words. And now Mrs. Miller likewise began to pour forth thanksgivings, as well in her own name, as in that of her cousin, and concluded with saying, she doubted not but such good-

ness would meet a glorious reward.

Jones answered, he had been sufficiently rewarded already. 'Your cousin's account, Madam, said he, hath given me a sensation more pleasing than I have ever known. He must be a wretch, who is unmoved at hearing such a story: how transporting then must be the thought of having happily acted a part in this scene! If there are men who cannot feel she delight of giving happiness to others, I sincerely pity them; as they are incapable of tasting what is, in my opinion, a greater honour, a higher interest, and a sweeter pleasure, than the ambitious, the avaricious or the voluptuous man, can ever obtain.'

The hour of appointment being now come, Jones was forced to take a hasty leave, but not before he had heartily shaken his friend by the hand, and desired to see him again as soon as possible; promising that he would himself take the first opportunity of visiting him at his own house. He then stept into the chair, and proceeded to Lady Bellaston's, greatly exulting in the happiness which he had procured to this poor family: nor could be forbear restecting without horror on the dreadful consequences which must have attended them, had he listened rather to the voice of strict justice than to that of mercy, when he was attacked on the high road.

Mrs. Miller fung forth the praises of Jones during the whole evening, in which Mr. Anderson, while he stayed, so passionately accompanied her, that he was often on the very point of mentioning the circumstances of the robbery. However, he luckily recollected himself, and avoided an indiscretion, which would have been so much

the greater, as he knew Mrs. Miller to be extremely strict and nice in her principles. He was likewise well apprized of the loquacity of this lady; and yet such was his gratitude, that it had almost got the better both of discretion and shame; and made him publish that which would have defamed his own character, rather than omit any circumstances which might do the sullest honour to his benefactor.

CHAP. XI.

In which the Reader will be surprised.

R. Jones was rather earlier than the time appointed, and earlier than the lady; whose arrival was hindered, not only by the distance of the place where she dined, but by some other cross accidents, very vexatious to one in her situation of mind. He was accordingly shewn into the drawing-room, where he had not been many minutes before the door opened, and in came—no other than Sophia herself, who had left the play before the end of the first act; for this, as we have already said, being a new play, at which two large parties met, the one to damn, and the other to applaud, a violent uproar, and an engagement between the two parties, had so terrified our heroine, that she was glad to put herself under the protection of a young gentleman, who safely conveyed her to her chair.

As Lady Bellaston had acquainted her that she should not be at home till late, Sophia expecting to find no one in the room, came hastily in, and went directly to a glass, which almost fronted her, without once looking towards the upper end of the room, where the statue of Jones now stood motionless. In this glass it was, after contemplating her own lovely face, that she first discovered the said statue; when instantly turning about, she perceived the reality of the vision; upon which she gave a violent scream, and scarce preserved herself from fainting, till Jones was able to move to her, and support

To paint the looks or thoughts of either of these lovers is beyond my power. As their sensations, from their mutual silence, may be judged to have been too big for

her in his arms.

their own utterance, it cannot be supposed that I should be able to express them; and the mistortune is, that few of my readers have been enough in love to feel by their

own hearts what passed at this time in their's.

After a fliort paule, Jones, with faultering accents. faid, 'I fee, Madam, you are furprised.'- Surprised! answered she: Oh, heavens! Indeed, I am surprised. I almost doubt whether you are the person you feem.'-Indeed, cries he, my Sophia; pardon me, Madam, for this once calling you fo; I am that very wretched Jones. whom Fortune, after so many disappointments, hath at last kindly conducted to you. Oh! my Sophia, did you know the thousand torments I have suffered in this long, fruitless pursuit.'- 'Pursuit of whom? faid Sophia, a little recollecting herfelf, and affuming a referved air.'- 'Can you be fo cruel to ask that question? cries Tones. Need I fav. of you?'- Of me! answered Sophia: hath Mr. Jones then any fuch important bufiness with me?'- To some, Madam, cries Jones, this might feem an important busines; (giving her the pocket-book.) I hope, Madam, you will find it of the same value as when it was loft.' Sophia took the pocket-book, and was going to speak, when he interrupted her thus: 'Let us not, I befeech you, lose one of those precious moments which Fortune hath so kindly fent us. O my Sophia! I have business of a much superior kind. Thus, on my knees, let me ask your pardon.'- 'My pardon, cries she : fure, Sir, after what is past-you cannot expect, after what I have heard,'- I scarce know what I say, answered Iones. By heavens! I scarce wish you should pardon me. O, my Sophia! henceforth never cast away a thought on such a wretch as I am. If any remembrance of me should ever intrude to give a moment's uneafiness to that tender before, think of my unworthiness; and let the remembrance of what passed at Upton blot me for ever from your mind.'

Sophia stood trembling all this while. Her face was whiter than snow, and her heart was throbbing through her stays. But at the mention of Upton, a blush arose in her cheeks; and her eyes, which before she had scarce

lifted up, were turned upon Jones with a glance of difdain. He understood this filent reproach, and replied to it thus: 'O, my Sophia! my only love! you cannot hate or despise me more for what happened there, than I do myself; but yet do me the justice to think, that my heart was never unfaithful to you-that had no share in the folly I was guilty of; it was even then unalterably yours. Though I despaired of possessing you, nay almost of ever feeing you more, I doated still on your charming idea, and could feriously love no other woman. But if my heart had not been engaged, she into whose company I accidentally fell at that curfed place was not an object of ferious love. Believe me, my angel, I never have feen her from that day to this; and never intend, or defire to see her again.' Sophia, in her heart, was very glad to hear this; but forcing into her face an air of more coldness than she had yet assumed, - Why, said she, Mr. Jones, do you take the trouble to make a defence where you are not accused? If I thought it worth while to accuse you, I have a charge of an unpardonable nature indeed.'- What is it, for Heaven's fake?' anfwered Jones, trembling and pale; expecting to hear of his amour with Lady Bellaston .- 'Oh, says she, how is it possible! Can every thing noble, and every thing base, be lodged together in the same bosom?' Lady Bellaston, and the ignominious circumstance of having been kept, rose again in his mind, and stopt his mouth from any reply. 'Could I have expected, proceeded Sophia, fuch treatment from you? nay, from any gentleman, from any man of honour? To have my name traduced in public; in inns, among the meanest vulgar! To have any little favours that my unguarded heart may have too lightly betrayed me to grant, boafted of there! Nay, even to hear that you had been forced to fly from my love!'

Nothing could equal Jones's furprise at these words of Sophia; but yet, not being guilty, he was much less embarrassed how to defend himself, than if she had touched that tender string at which his conscience had been alarmed. By some examination, he presently sound,

Vol. III. F

that her supposing him guilty of so shocking an outrage against his love and her reputation, was entirely owing to Partridge's talk at the inns, before landlords and fervants; for Sophia confessed to him it was from them that the received her intelligence. He had no very great difficulty to make her believe that he was entirely innocent of an offence so foreign to his character; but she had a great deal to hinder him from going instantly home, and putting Partridge to death, which he more than once fwore he would do. This point being cleared up, they foon found themselves so well pleased with each other, that Jones quite forgot he had began the conversation with conjuring her to give up all thoughts of him: and fhe was in a temper to have given ear to a petition of a very different nature: for, before they were aware, they had both gone so far, that he let fall some words that founded like a proposal of marriage; to which she replied, that, did not her duty to her father forbid her to follow her own inclinations, ruin with him would be more welcome to her than the most affluent fortune with another man. At the mention of the word ruin. he started, let drop her hand, which he had held for fome time, and striking his breast with his own, cried out, 'Oh, Sophia! can I then ruin thee? No! by Heavens, no! I never will act so base a part. Dearest Sophia, whatever it costs me, I will renounce you: I will give you up: I will tear all fuch hopes from my heart, as are inconsistent with your real good. My love I will ever retain, but it shall be in silence; it shall be at a distance from you: it shall be in some foreign land; from whence no voice, no figh of my despair, shall ever reach and disturb your ears! And when I am dead-' He would have gone on; but was Ropt by a flood of tears, which Sophia let fall in his bolom, upon which she leaned, without being able to speak one word. He kissed them off; which, for some moments, the allowed him to do without any refistance; but then recollecting herself, gently withdrew out of his arms; and, to turn the discourse from a subject too tender, and which she found she could not support, bethought herself to ask him a question she never had time to put to him before—how he came into that room. He began to stammer, and would in all probability have raised her suspicions by the answer he was going to give, when at once the door opened, and in came Lady Bellaston.

Having advanced a few steps, and seeing Jones and Sophia together, she suddenly stopt; when, after a pause of a few moments, recollecting herself with admirable presence of mind, she said, though with sufficient indications of surprise both in voice and countenance, 'I thought, Miss Western, you had been at the play?'

Though Sophia had no opportunity of learning of Jones by what means he had discovered her, yet, as she had not the least suspicion of the real truth, or that Jones and Lady Bellaston were acquainted, so she was very little confounded; and the less, as the lady had, in all their conversations on the subject, entirely taken her side against her father. With very little hesitation, therefore, she went through the whole story of what had happened at the play-house, and the cause of her hasty return.

The length of this narrative gave Lady Bellaston an opportunity of rallying her spirits, and of considering in what manner to act. And as the behaviour of Sophia gave her hopes that Jones had not betrayed her, she put on an air of good humour, and said, I should not have broke in so abruptly upon you, Miss Western, if I had

known you had company.

Lady Bellaston fixed her eyes on Sophia whilst she spoke these words: to which that poor young lady, having her face overspread with blushes and confusion, answered, in a stammering voice, 'I am sure, Madam, I shall always think the honour of your ladyship's company—' 'I hope, at least, cries Lady Bellaston, I interrupt no business.'—' No, Madam, answered Sophia: our business was at an end. Your ladyship may be pleased to remember, I have often mentioned the loss of my pocket-book; which this gentleman having very

E 2

luckily found, was so kind to return it to me with the

Jones, ever fince the arrival of Lady Bellaston, had been ready to fink with fear. He sat kicking his heels, playing with his singers, and looking more like a sool, if it be possible, than a young booby squire, when he is first introduced into a polite assembly. He began, however, now to recover himself; and taking a hint from the behaviour of Lady Bellaston, who, he saw, did not intend to claim any acquaintance with him, he resolved as entirely to affect the stranger on his part. He said, ever since he had the pocket book in his possession, he had used great diligence in inquiring out the lady whose name was writ in it; but never till that day could be so fortunate to discover her.

Sophia had, indeed, mentioned the loss of her pocket-book to Lady Bellaston; but as Jones, for some reason or other, had never once hinted to her that it was in his possession, she believed not one syllable of what Sophia now said, and wonderfully admired the extreme quickness of the young lady, in inventing such an excuse. The reason of Sophia's leaving the play-house met with no better credit; and though she could not account for the meeting between these two lovers, she was firmly persuaded it was not accidental.

With an affected smile, therefore, she said, Indeed, Miss Western, you have had very good luck in recovering your money. Not only as it fell into the hands of a gentleman of honour, but as he happened to discover to whom it belonged. I think you would not consent to have it advertised. It was great good fortune, Sir, that

you found out to whom the note belonged.'

O Madam, cries Jones, it was inclosed in a pocketbook, in which the young lady's name was written.

That was very fortunate indeed, cries the lady; and it was no less so, that you heard Miss Western was

at my house; for she is very little known.'

Jones had at length perfectly recovered his spirits; and as he conceived he had now an opportunity of satisfying Sophia, as to the question she had asked him just before Lady Bellaston came in, he proceeded thus: Why, Madam, answered he, it was by the luckiest chance imaginable I made this discovery. I was mentioning what I had found, and the name of the owner, the other night, to a lady at the masquerade; who told me, she believed she knew where I might see Miss Western; and if I would come to her house the next morning, she would inform me. I went, according to her appointment, but she was not at home; nor could I ever meet with her till this morning, when she directed me to your ladyship's house. I came accordingly, and did myself the honour to ask for your ladyship; and upon my saying that I had very particular business, a servant shewed me into this room; where I had not been long before the young lady returned from the play.

Upon his mentioning the masquerade, he looked very slily at Lady Bellaston, without any fear of being remarked by Sophia; for she was visibly too much confounded to make any observations. This hint a little alarmed the lady, and she was silent; when Jones, who saw the agitations of Sophia's mind, resolved to take the only method of relieving her, which was by retiring; but before he did this, he said, 'I believe, Madam, it is customary to give some reward on these occasions: I must insist on a very high one for my honesty; it is, Madam, no less than the honour of being permitted to pay

another visit here."

Sir, replied the lady, I make no doubt that you are a gentleman, and my doors are never shut to people of fashion.

Jones then, after proper ceremonials, departed highly to his own satisfaction, and no less to that of Sophia; who was terribly alarmed lest Lady Bellaston should dis-

cover what she knew already but too well.

Upon the stairs Jones met his old acquaintance, Mrs. Honour; who, notwithstanding all she had said against him, was now so well-bred, to behave with great civility. This meeting proved, indeed, a lucky circumstance, as he communicated to her the house where he lodged, with which Sophia was unacquainted.

E 3

In which the Thirteenth Book is concluded.

THE elegant Lord Shaftesbury somewhere objects to telling too much truth; by which it may be fairly inferred, that, in some cases, to lie is not only excuseable, but commendable.

And furely, there are no persons who may so properly challenge a right to this commendable deviation from truth, as young women in the affair of love; for which, they may plead precept, education, and above all, the sanction, nay I may say, the necessity, of custom; by which they are restrained, not from submitting to the honest impulses of nature, (for that would be a foolish prohibition,) but from owning them.

We are not, therefore, ashamed to say, that our heroine now pursued the dictates of the above-mentioned right honourable philosopher. As she was perfectly satisfied, then, that Lady Bellaston was ignorant of the person of Jones, so she determined to keep her in that ignorance, though at the expence of a little fibbing.

Jones had not been long gone, before Lady Bellaston eried, 'Upon my word, a good pretty young fellow: I wonder who he is; for I don't remember ever to have

feen his face before.'

Nor I neither, Madam, cries Sophia. I must fay he behaved very handsomely in relation to my note.

'Yes; and he is a very handsome young fellow, said

the lady: don't you think fo?'

I did not take much notice of him, answered Sophia; but I thought he seemed rather awkward and un-

genteel than otherwise."

You are extremely right, cries Lady Bellaston: you may see by his manner, that he hath not kept good company. Nay, notwithstanding his returning your note, and refusing the reward, I almost question whether he is a gentleman. I have always observed there is a something in persons well-born, which others can never acquire. I think I will give orders not to be at home to him.

Nay, sure, Madam, answered Sophia, one can't suspect, after what he hath done: besides, if your ladyship observed him, there was an elegance in his discourse, a delicacy, a prettiness of expression, that, that—'

I confess, said Lady Bellaston, the fellow hath words -And, indeed, Sophia, you must forgive me, indeed,

you must-

"I forgive your ladyship! said Sophia."

Yes, indeed you must! answered she, laughing; for I had a horrible suspicion when I first came into the room—I vow you must forgive it; but I suspected it was Mr. Jones himself.

Did your ladyship indeed? cries Sophia, blushing,

and affecting a laugh.

'Yes; I vow I did, answered she: I can't imagine what put it into my head; for, give the fellow his due, he was genteelly dressed; which, I think, dear Sophy, is not commonly the case with your friend.'

'This raillery, cries Sophia, is a little cruel, Lady Bel-

laston, after my promise to your ladyship.'

'Not at all, child, said the lady: it would have been cruel before; but after you have promised me never to marry without your father's consent, in which you know is implied your giving up Jones, sure you can bear a little raillery on a passion which was pardonable enough in a young girl in the country, and of which you tell me you have so entirely got the better. What must I think, my dear Sophy, if you cannot bear a little ridicule even on his dress? I shall begin to fear you are very far gone indeed; and almost question whether you have dealt ingenuously with me.'

'Indeed, Madam, cries Sophia, your ladyship mistakes me, if you imagine I had any concern on his ac-

count.'

'On his account! answered the lady: you must have mistaken me; I went no farther than his dress; for I would not injure your taste by any other comparison.—I don't imagine, my dear Sophy, if your Mr. Jones had been such a fellow as this—'

'I thought, says Sophia, your ladyship had allowed him to be handsome.'

' Whom, pray? cried the lady haftily.'

'Mr. Jones, answered Sophia: and immediately recollecting herself. Mr. Jones! no, no! I ask your pardon: I mean the gentleman who was just now here.'

O Sophy! Sophy! cries the lady, this Mr. Jones, I

am afraid, ftill runs in your head.'

Then, upon my honour, Madam, faid Sophia, Mr. Jones is as entirely indifferent to me as the gentleman who just now left us!

'Upon my honour, said Lady Bellaston, I believe it. Forgive me, therefore, a little innocent raillery; but I promise you I will never mention his name any more.'

And now the two ladies separated; inferiely more to the delight of Sophia, than of Lad Bel' aston, who would willingly have tormented her rival a little longer, had not business of more importance called her away.— As for Sophia, her mind was not perfectly easy under this first practice of deceit: upon which, when she retired to her chamber, she reflected with the highest uncasiness and conscious shame. Nor could the peculiar bardship of her situation, and the necessity of the case, at all reconcile her mind to her conduct; for the frame of ther mind was too delicate to bear the thought of having been guilty of a salshood, however qualified by circumstances: nor did this thought once suffer her to close her eyes during the whole succeeding night.

BOOK XIV.

Containing Two Days. - CHAP. I.

An Essay to prove that an Author will write the better, for having some Knowledge of the Subject on which he writes.

A S several gentlemen, in these times, by the wonderful force of genius only, without the least affistance of learning, (perhaps, without being well able to read,) have made a considerable figure in the republic of letters, the modern critics, I am told, have lately begun to affert, that all kind of learning is entirely useless to a writer; and indeed, no other than a kind of fetters on the natural sprightliness and activity of the imagination, which is thus weighed down, and prevented from soaring to those high flights, which otherwise it would be able to reach.

This doctrine, I am afraid, is, at present, carried much too far: for why should writing differ so much from all other arts? The nimbleness of a dancing-master is not at all prejudiced by being taught to move; nor doth any mechanic, I believe, exercise his tools the worse, by knowing how to use them. For my own part, I cannot conceive that Homer or Virgil would have wrote with more fire, if, instead of being masters of all the learning of their times, they had really been as ignorant as most of the authors of the present age. Nor do I believe that all the imagination, fire, and judgment of Pitt, could have produced those orations that have made the senate of England, in these our times, a rival in eloquence to Greece and Rome, if he had not been fo well read in the writings of Demosthenes and Cicero, as to have transfuled their whole spirit into his speeches; and with their spirit, their knowledge too.

I would not here be understood to insist on the same fund of learning in any of my brethren, as Cicero perfuades us is necessary to the composition of an orator.—
On the contrary, very little reading is, I conceive, necessary to the poet; less to the critic; and least of all to the politician. For the first, perhaps, Byshe's Art of Poetry, and a few of our modern poets, may suffice; for the second, a moderate heap of plays; and, for the

last, an indifferent collection of political journals.

To say the truth, I require no more than that a man should have some little knowledge of the subject on which he treats; according to the old maxim of law, Quam quisque norit artem in ea se exerceat. With this alone, a writer may sometimes do tolerably well; and, indeed, without this, all the other learning in the world will stand him in little stead.

For instance, let us suppose that Homer and Virgil, Aristotle and Cicero, Thucydides and Livy, could have met altogether, and have clubbed their talents, to have composed a treatise on the Art of Dancing; I believe it will be readily agreed, they could not have equalled the excellent treatise which Mr. Essex hath given us on that subject, entitled, The Rudiments of genteel Education. And, indeed, should the excellent Mr. Broughton be prevailed on to set sist to paper, and complete the abovessaid rudiments, by delivering down the true principles of athletics, I question whether the world will have any cause to lament, that none of the great writers, either ancient or modern, have ever treated about that noble and useful art.

To avoid a multiplicity of examples in fo plain a case, and to come at once to my point, I am apt to conceive, that one reason why many English writers have totally failed in describing the manners of upper life, may possibly be, that in reality they know nothing of it.

This is a knowledge unhappily not in the power of many authors to arrive at. Books will give us a very imperfect idea of it; nor will the stage a much better: the fine gentleman, formed upon reading the former, will almost always turn out a pedant and he who forms

himself upon the latter, a coxcomb.

Nor are the characters drawn from these models better supported. Vanburgh and Congreve copied nature; but they who copy them, draw as unlike the present age, as Hogarth would do, if he was to paint a rout or a drum in the dresses of Titian and Vandyke. In short, imitation here will not do the business: the picture must be after Nature herself. A true knowledge of the world is gained only by conversation; and the manners of every rank must be seen, in order to be known.

Now it happens, that this higher order of mortals is not to be feen like all the rest of the human species, for nothing, in the streets, shops, and coffee houses; nor are they shewn, like the upper rank of animals, for so much apiece. In short, this is a sight to which no persons are smitted without one or other of these qualifications, vie.

either birth or fortune, or what is equivalent to both—the honourable profession of a gamester. And, very unluckily for the world, persons so qualified, very seldom care to take upon themselves the bad trade of writing, which is generally entered upon by the lower and poorer fort, as it is a trade which many think requires no kind of

flock to fet up with.

Hence those strange monsters in lace and embroidery, in silks and brocades, with vast wigs and hoops, which, under the name of lords and ladies, strut the stage to the great delight of attornies and their clerks in the pit; and of the citizens and their apprentices in the galleries; and which are no more to be found in real life, than the centaur, the chimera, or any other creature of mere siction. But, to let my reader into a secret, this knowledge of upper life, though very necessary for the preventing missakes, is no very great resource to a writer whose province is comedy; or that kind of novels, which, like this I am writing, is of the comic class.

What Mr. Pope says of women, is very applicable to most in this station, who are, indeed, so entirely made up of form and affectation, that they have no character at all; at least, none which appears. I will venture to say, the highest life is much the dullest, and affords very little humour or entertainment. The various callings in lower spheres produce the great variety of humorous characters; whereas here, except among the sew who are engaged in the pursuit of ambition, and the sewer still who have a relish for pleasure, all is vanity and service imitation. Dressing and cards, eating and drinking, bowing and curtseying, make up the business of their

lives.

Some there are, however, of this rank, upon whom passion exercises its tyranny, and hurries them far beyond the bounds which decorum prescribes; of these, the ladies are as much distinguished by their noble intrepidity, and a certain superior contempt of reputation, from the frail ones of meaner degree, as a virtuous woman of quality is, by the elegance and delicacy of her sentiments, from the honest wife of a yeoman or shopkeeper

Lady Bellaston was of this intrepid character: but let not my country readers conclude from her, that this is the general conduct of women of fashion, or that we mean to represent them as such. They might as well suppose, that every clergyman was represented by Thwackum, or every soldier by Ensign Northerton,

There is not, indeed, a greater error, than that which univerfally prevails among the vulgar; who, borrowing their opinion from some ignorant satirists, have affixed the character of lewdness to these times. On the contrary, I am convinced there never was less of love intrigue carried on among persons of condition than now, Our present women have been taught by their mothers to fix their thoughts only on ambition and vanity, and to despise the pleasures of love, as unworthy their regard; and being afterwards, by the care of such mothers, married without having husbands, they feem pretty well confirmed in the justness of those sentiments; whence they content themselves, for the dull remainder of life, with the pursuit of more innocent, but, I am afraid, more childish amusements; the bare mention of which would ill fuit with the dignity of this hiftory. In my humble opinion, the true characteristic of the present beau monde, is rather folly than vice; and the only epithet which it deserves is, that of Frivolous.

CHAP. II.

Containing Letters and other Matters which attend Amours.

JONES had not long been at home before he received the following letter:

I never was more surfrised than when I found you was gone. When you left the room, I little imagined you intended to have left the bouse without seeing me again. Your behaviour is all of a piece, and convinces me how much I ought to despise a heart which can doat upon an ideot; though I know not whether I should not admire her cunning more than her simplicity; wonderful both! for though she understood not a word of what passed between us, she yet had the skill, the assurance, the — what shall I call it? to deny to my face, that she knows you, or ever saw you before! Was that a scheme laid between you? and have you been hase enough to betray me? O bow I despise her, you, and all the world, but chiefly myself! for—I dare not

write what I should afterwards run mad to read; but, remember, I can detest as violently as I have loved!

Jones had but little time given him to reflect on this letter, before a second was brought him from the same hand; and this, likewise, we shall set down in the precise words—

When you consider the hurry of stirits in which I must have writ, you cannot be surprised at any expressions in my former note; yet, perhaps, on restection, they were rather too warm. At least, I would, if possible, think all owing to the odious playbouse, and to the impertinence of a fool, which detained me beyond my appointment. How easy is it to think well of those we love! Perhaps you desire I should think so. I have resolved to see you to-night; so come to me immediately.

P. S. I have ordered to be at home to none but your felf.

P. S. Mr. Jones will imagine I shall assist him in his defence; for I believe he cannot desire to impose on me, more than I desire to impose upon myself.

P. S. Come immediately.'

To the men of intrigue I refer the determination whether the angry or the tender letter gave the greatest uneafiness to Jones. Certain it is, he had no violent inclination to pay any more visits that evening, unless to one fingle person. However, he thought his honour engaged; and had not this been motive sufficient, he would not have venturned to blow the temper of Lady Bellaston into that flame of which he had reason to think it susceptible, and of which he feared the consequence might be a discovery to Sophia, which he dreaded. After some discontented walks, therefore, about the rooms he was preparing to depart, when the lady kindly prevented him, not by another letter, but by her own pre-She entered the room very disordered in her dress and very discomposed in her looks, and threw herself into a chair: where having recovered her breath, the faid-' You see, Sir, when women have gone one length too far, they will stop at none. If any person would have fworn this to me a week ago, I would not have believed it of myself.'- I hope Madam, said Jones, my charming Lady Bellaston will be as difficult to believe any thing against one who is sensible of the many obligations Vol. III.

she hath conferred upon him.'- ' Indeed! fays she; senfible of obligations! Did I expect to hear such cold lan. guage from Mr. Jones?'- Pardon me, my dear angel, said he, if, after the letters I have received, the terrors of your anger, though I know not how I have deserved it.'- 'And have I then, fays she, with a smile, so angry a countenance? have I really brought a chiding face with me?'- 'If there be honour in man, faid he, I have done nothing to merit your anger. You remember the appointment you fent me-I went in pursuance.'- 'I beseech you, cried she, do not run through the odious recital-Answer me but one question, and I shall be eafy; have you not betrayed my honour to her?' Jones fell upon his knees, and began to utter the most violent protestations-when Partridge came dancing and capering into the room like one drunk with joy, crying out, · She's found! she's found! Here, Sir, here; she's here! Mrs. Honour is upon the stairs.'- Stop her a moment, cries Jones. Here, Madam, step behind the bed: I have no other room nor closet, nor place on earth to hide you in. Sure never was so damn'd an accident !'- 'D-n'd indeed! faid the lady, as she went to the place of concealment: and presently afterwards in came Mrs. Honour, · Heyday! faid she, Mr. Jones, what's the matter? That impudent rascal, your servant, would scarce let me come up stairs. I hope he hath not the same reason now to keep me from you, as he had at Upton. I suppose you hardly expected to see me; but you have certainly bewitched my lady. Poor dear young lady! To be fure, I loves her as tenderly as if the was my own fister. Lord have mercy upon you, if you don't make her a good husband; and to be sure, if you do not, nothing can be bad enough for you.'- Jones begged her only to whisper, for that there was a lady dying in the next room. - A lady! cries she; aye, I suppose one of your ladies. O, Mr. Jones, there are too many of them in the world: I believe we are got into the house of one; for my Lady Bellatton, I darft to fay, is no better than The should be.'- 'Hush! hush! cried Jones; every word is overheard in the next room. '- I don't care a farthing,

eries Honour; I speaks no scandal of any one; but, to be fure, the fervants make no fcruple of faying as how her lady hip meets men at another place-where the house goes under the name of a poor gentlewoman; but her ladyship pays the rent, and many's the good thing besides, they fay, she hath of her.' Here Jones, after expressing the utmost uneasiness, offered to stop her mouth. 'Heyday! why, fure, Mr. Jones, you will let me speak; I speaks no scandal, for I only says what I heard from others-and, thinks I to myfelf, much good may it do the gentlewoman with her riches, if the comes by it in fuch a wicked manner. To be fure, it is better to be poor and honest.'- The servants are villains, cries Jones, and abuse their lady unjustly. '- 'Aye, to be sure, servants are always villains, and fo my lady fays, and won't hear a word of it.'- 'No, I am convinced, fays Jones, my Sophia is above listening to such base scandal.'- ' Nay, I believe it is no scandal neither, cries Honour; for why should she meet men at another house?-it can never be for any good : for if the had a lawful defign of being courted, as to be fure any lady may lawfully give her company to men upon that account; why, where can be the lense. '- ' I protest, cries Jones, I can't hear all this of a lady of such honour, and a relation of Sophia: besides, you will distract the poor lady in the next room-Let me entreat you to walk with medown stairs.'- 'Nay, Sir, if you won't let me speak, I have done-Here, Sir, is a letter from my young lady :- what would some non give to have this! But, Mr. Jones, I think you are not over and above generous; and yet I have heard some servants say-but I am sure you will do me the justice to own, I never faw the colour of your money.' Here Jones hastily took the letter, and presently after slipped five pieces into her hand. He then returned a thouland thanks to his dear Sophia in a whisper, and begged her to leave him to read her letter : the presently departed, not without expressing much grateful fense of his generofity.

Lady Bellaston now came from behind the curtain. How shall I describe her rage? Her tongue was at first incapable of utterance; but streams of fire darted from

her eyes; and well, indeed, they might, for her heart was all in a flame. And, now, as foon as her voice found way, instead of expressing any indignation against Honour, or her own fervants, she began to attack poor Jones. 'You fee, faid she, what I have facrificed to you! my reputation, my honour-gone for ever! And what return have I found? Neglected, flighted, for a country girl, for an idiot!'- 'What neglect, Madam, or what flight, cries Jones, have I been guilty of?'-Mr. Jones, faid fhe, it is in vain to diffemble; if you will make me easy, you must entirely give her up; and, as a proof of your intention, shew me the letter.'- What letter, Madam? says Jones.'- Nay, surely, says she, you cannot have the confidence to deny your having received a letter by the hands of that trollop?'- 'And can your ladyship, cries he, ask of me what I must part with my honour before I grant? Have I acted in such a manner by your ladyship? Could I be guilty of betraying this poor innocent girl to you, what fecurity could you have, that I should not act the same part by yourself? A moment's reflection will, I am fure, convince you, that a man with whom the secrets of a lady are not safe, must be the most contemptible of wretches.'- 'Very well, faid she; I need not infift on your becoming this contemptible wretch in your own opinion; for the infide of the letter could inform me of nothing more than I know already. I see the footing you are upon.' Here ensued a long conversation, which the reader, who is not too curious, will thank me for not inferting at length. It shall suffice, therefore, to inform him, that Lady Bellaston grew more and more pacified, and at length believed, or affected to believe, his protestations-that his meeting with Sophia that evening was merely accidental, and every other matter which the reader already knows; and which, as Iones fet before her in the strongest light, it is plain that shehad in reality no reason to be angry with him.

She was not, however, in he heart, perfectly fatisfied with his refusal to shew her the letter; so deaf are we to the clearest reason, when it argues against our prevailing passions. She was, indeed, well convinced that

Sophia possessed the first place in Jones's affections; and yet, haughty and amovous as this lady was, she submitted at last to bear the second place; or, to express it more properly in a legal phrase, was contented with the possession of that of which another woman had the reversion.

It was at length agreed, that Jones should for the future visit at the house; for that Sophia, her maid, and all the servants, would place the visits to the account of Sophia; and that she herself would be considered as the

person imposed upon.

This scheme was contrived by the lady, and highly relished by Jones; who was, indeed, glad to have a prospect of seeing his Sophia at any rate; and the lady herself was not a little pleased with the imposition on Sophia; which Jones, she thought, could not possibly discover to her for his own sake.

The next day was appointed for the first visit; and then, after proper ceremonials, the lady Bellaston re-

turned home.

CHAP. III.

Containing various Matters.

JONES was no fooner alone, than he eagerly broke open the letter, and read as follows—

'Sir,

'It is impossible to express what I have suffered since you left this house; and as I have reason to think you intend coming here again, I have sent Honour, though so late at night, as she tells me she knows your lodgings, to prevent you. I charge you, by all the regard you have for me, not to think of visiting here; for it will certainly be discovered: nay, I almost doubt, from some things that have dropt from her ladyship, that she is not already without some suspicion. Something savourable, perhaps, may happen: we must wait with patience; but I once more entreat you, if you have any concern for my ease, do not think of returning hither.'

This letter administered the same kind of consolation to poor Jones, which Job formerly received from his friends. Besides disappointing all the hopes which he promised to himself from seeing Sophia, he was reduced to an unhappy dilemma with regard to Lady Bellaston; for there are some certain engagements, which, as he well knew, do very difficultly admit of any excuse for the failure, and to go, after the strict prohibition from So-

phia, he was not to be forced by any human power. At length, after much deliberation, which, during that night, supplied the place of sleep, he determined to seign himself sick: for this suggested itself as the only means of failing the appointed visit, without incensing Lady Bellaston, which he had more than one reason of desiring to avoid.

The first thing, however, which he did in the morning, was to write an answer to Sophia, which he inclosed in one to Honour. He then dispatched another to Lady Bellaston, containing the above mentioned excuse: and

to this he foon received the following answer-

'I am wext that I cannot see you here this afternoon, but more conserned for the occasion: take great care of yourself, and have the hest advice; and I hope there will be no danger. I am so tormented all this morning with fools, that I have scarce a moment's time to write to you. Adieu.

P. S. I will endeavour to call on you this evening at nine. Be

Sure to be alone.'

Mr. Jones now received a vifit from Mrs. Miller; who, after some formal introduction, began the following speech.- 'I am very forry, Sir, to wait upon you on fuch an occasion; but I hope you will consider the ill-confequence which it must be to the reputation of my poor girls, if my house should once be talked of as a house of ill fame. I hope you won't think me, therefore, guilty of impertinence, if I beg you not to bring any more ladies in at that time of night. The clock had fruck two before one of them went away.'- I do affure you, Madam, said Jones, the lady who was here last night, and who flayed the lateft, (for the other only brought me a letter) is a woman of very great fashion, and my near relation.'- 'I don't know what fashion she is of, answered Mrs. Miller, but I am sure no woman of virtue, unless a very near relation indeed, would visit a young gentleman at ten at night, and stay four hours in the room with him alone. Besides, Sir, the behaviour of her chairmen shews what she was; for they did nothing but make jest all the evening in the entry; and asked Mr. Partridge, in the hearing of my own maid, if Madam intended to fray with his mafter all night;

with a great deal of stuff not proper to be repeated. have really a great respect for you, Mr. Jones, upon your own account: nay. I have a very high obligation to you for your generofity to my cousin: indeed, I did not know how very good you have been till lately. Little did I imagine to what dreadful courses the poor man's distress had driven him. Little did I think, when you gave me the ten guineas, that you had given them to a highwayman! O Heavens! what goodness have you shewn! How have you preserved this family! The character which Mr. Allworthy hath formerly given me of you, was, I find, strictly true: and, indeed, if I had no obligation to you, my obligations to him are fuch, that, on his account, I should shew you the utmost respect in my power. Nay, believe me, dear Mr. Jones, if my daughters and my own reputation were out of the case, I should, for your own sake, be forry that so pretty a young gentleman should converse with these women; but if you are resolved to do it, I must beg you to take another lodging; for I do not like mylelf to have such things carried on under my roof; but more especially upon the account of my girls, who have little, Heaven knows, besides their characters, to recommend them.' Iones started, and changed colour, at the name of Allworthy .- 'Indeed, Mrs. Miller, answered he, a little warmly, I do not take this at all kind. I will never bring any flander on your house: but I must insist on feeing what company I please in my own room; and if that gives you any offence, I shall, as soon as I am able, look for another lodging.'- I am forry we must part, then, Sir, said she; but I am convinced Mr. Allworthy himself would never come within my doors if he had the least suspicion of my keeping an ill house.'- Very well, Madam, faid Jones.'- I hope, Sir, faid she, you are not angry; for I would not for the world offend any of Mr. Allworthy's family. I have not flept a wink all night about this matter.'- 'I am forry I have disturbed your rest, Madam, said Jones; but I beg you will send Partridge up to me immediately; which she promised to do; and then, with a very low curtfey, retired.

As foon as Partridge arrived, Jones fell upon him in the most outrageous manner. 'How often, said he. am I to fuffer for your folly, or rather, for my own in keeping you? Is that tongue of yours refolved upon my destruction?"- What have I done, Sir? answered affrighted Partridge.'- Who was it gave you authority to mention the flory of the robbery, or that the man you faw here was the person?'-'I. Sir! cries Partridge.-' Now don't be guilty of a falshood in denying it,' said Iones .- 'If I did mention fuch a matter, answers Partridge, I am fure I thought no harm: for I should not have opened my lips, if it had not been to his own triends and relations; who, I imagined, would have let it go no farther.'- But I have a much heavier charge against you, cries Jones than this. How durst you, after all the precautions I gave you, mention the name of Mr. Allworthy in this house?' Partridge denied he ever had, with many oaths. ' How elfe, faid Jones, should Mrs. Miller be acquainted that there was any connection between him and me? And it is but this moment the told me, the respected me on his account.'- O Lord, Sir! faid Partridge, I defire only to be heard out; and to be fure, never was any thing fo unfortunate : hear me out. and you will own how wrongfully you have accused me. When Mrs. Honour came down stairs last night, she met me in the entry, and asked me when my master had heard from Mr. Allworthy; and to be fure, Mrs. Miler heard the very words; and the moment Madam Honour was gone, she called me into the parlour to her: Mr. Partridge, fays she, what Mr. Allworthy is that the gentlewoman mentioned? Is it the great Mr. Allworthy of Somersetshire?"-" Upon my word, Madam, fays I, I know nothing of the matter."-" Sure, fays. she, your master is not the Mr. Jones I have heard Mr. Allworthy talk of?"-" Upon my word, Midam, fays I, I know nothing of the matter."-" Then, fays she, turning to her daughter Nancy, says she, as sure as ten-pence, this is the very young gentleman; and he agrees exactly with the squire's description." The Lord above knows who it was told her; for I am the

arrantest villain that ever walked upon two legs if ever it came out of my mouth. I promise you, Sir, I can keep a fecret when I am defired. Nay, Sir, fo far was. I from telling her any thing about Mr. Allworthy, that I told her the very direct contrary: for though I did not contradict it at that moment, yet, as second thoughts they fay, are best; so when I came to consider, that fomebody must have informed her, thinks I to myself. I will put an end to the story; and so I went back again into the parlour, some time afterwards, and says I. "Upon my word, fays I, whoever, fays I, told you that this gentleman was Mr. Jones; that is, fays I, that this Mr. Iones was that Mr. Iones, told you a confounded lie: and I beg, fays I, you will never mention any fuch matter, fays I; for my mafter, fays I, will think I must have told you so; and I defy any body in the house, ever to say I-mentioned any such word." To be certain, Sir, it is a wonderful thing; and I have been thinking with myself ever fince, how it was she came to know it: not but I faw an old woman here t'other day a begging at the door, who looked as like her we faw in Warwickshire, that caused all that mis-To be fure, it is never good to pass by an old woman without giving her something, especially if she looks at you; for all the world shall never persuade me but they have a great power to do mischief; and, to be fure, I shall never see an old woman again, but I shall think to myself, infandum, regina, jubes renovare dolorem.

The simplicity of Partridge set Jones a laughing, and put a final end to his anger, which had indeed seldom any long duration in his mind; and instead of commenting on his defence, he told him, he intended presently to leave those lodgings; and ordered him to go and endea-

vour to get him others.

CHAP. IV.

Which we hope will be very attentively perused by young People of both Sexes.

PARTRIDGE had no fooner left Mr. Jones, than Mr. Nightingale, with whom he had now contract-

70

ed a great intimacy, came to him, and after a fhort falutation, faid, 'So, Tom, I hear you had company very late last night. Upon my foul, you are a happy fellow, who have not been in town above a fortnight. and can keep chairs waiting at your door till two in the morning!' He then ran on with much common-place raillery of the same kind, till Iones at length interrupted him, faying, 'I suppose you have received all this information from Mrs. Miller, who hath been up here a little while ago, to give me warning. The good woman is afraid, it feems, of the reputation of her daughters.'- Oh, the is wonderfully nice, fays Nightingale. upon that account: if you remember, the would not let Nancy go with us to the masquerade,'- 'Nay, upon my honour, I think she's in the right of it, says Jones: however, I have taken her at her word, and have fent Partridge to look for another lodging.'- 'If you will, fays Nightingale, we may, I believe, be again together; for, to tell you a secret, which I desire you won't mention in the family, I intend to quit the house today.'- What! hath Mrs. Miller given you warning too, my friend?' cries Jones. 'No, answered the other; but the rooms are not convenient enough. Befides, I am grown weary of this part of the town. I want to be nearer the places of diversion: so I am going to Pall Mall.'- 'And do you intend to make a fecret of your going away?' faid Jones. I promife you, answered Nightingale, I don't intend to bilk my lodgings; but I have a private reason for not taking a formal leave.'- Not so private, answered Jones, I promise you: I have seen it ever since the second day of my coming to the house. Here will be some wet eyes on your departure. Poor Nancy! I pity her, faith! Indeed, Jack, you have played the fool with that girl. You have given her a longing, which, I am afraid, nothing will ever cure her of.'-Nightingale answered, 'What the devil would you have me do? Would you have me marry her to cure her?'- No, answered Jones; I would not have had you make love to her, as you have often done in my presence. I have been astonished at the

blindness of her mother in never seeing it.'- Pugh, see it! cries Nightingale; what the devil should she see?' - Why, fee! faid Jones, that you have made her daughter diffractedly in love with you. The poor girl cannot conceal it a moment; her eyes are never off from you, and fhe always colours every time you come into the room, Indeed, I pity her heartily; for the feems to be one of the best-natured and honestest of human creatures.'- 'And fo, answered Nightingale, according to your doctrine, one must not amuse one's self by any common gallantries with women, for fear they should fall in love with us?'- 'Indeed, Jack, faid Jones, you wilfully mifunderstand me; I do not fancy women are so apt to fall in love; but you have gone far beyond common gallantries.'- What, do you suppose, fays Nightingale, that we have been a-bed together?'- No, upon my honour, answered Jones, very seriously; I do not suppose so ill of you: nay, I will go farther, I do not imagine you have laid a regular premeditated scheme for the destruction of the quiet of a poor little creature, or have even foreseen the consequence; for I am sure thou are a very good-natured fellow; and fuch a one can never be guilty of a cruelty of that kind; but, at the fame time, you have pleased your own vanity, without confidering that this poor girl was made a facrifice to it; and while you have had no defign but of amufing an idle hour, you have actually given her reason to flatter herself, that you had the most serious designs in her favour. Pr'ythee, Jack, answer me honestly: to what have tended all those elegant and luscious descriptions of happiness arifing from violent and mutual fondness; all those warm professions of tenderness, and generous, difinterested love? Did you imagine she would not apply them? or, speak ingenuously, did not you intend she should? - Upon my foul, Tom, cries Nightingale, I did not think this was in thee! Thou wilt make an admirable parson. So, I suppose, you would not go to bed to Nancy, now, if the would let you?'- No, cries Jones; may I be d-n'd if I would !'- 'Tom, Tom! answered Nightingale, last night! remember last night!'

"When ev'ry eye was clos'd, and the pale moon
And filent flars shone conscious of the theft."

Look'e, Mr. Nightingale, said Jones, I am no canting hypocrite, nor do I pretend to the gift of chastity more than my neighbours. I have been guilty with women, I own it; but am not conscious that I have ever injured any. Nor would I, to procure pleasure to myself, be knowingly the cause of misery to any human being.'

Well, well, faid Nightingale, I believe you; and I

am convinced you acquit me of any fuch things."

'I do, from my heart,' answered Jones, ' of having debauched the girl, but not from having gained her affections.'

'If I have,' said Nightingale, 'I am sorry for it; but time and absence will soon wear off such impressions. It is a receipt I must take myself: for, to confess the truth to you, I never liked any girl half so much in my whole life. But I must let you into the whole secret, Tom. My farther hath provided a match for me with a woman I never saw; and she is now coming to town, in order for me to make my addresses to her.'

At these words Jones burst into a loud fit of laughter; when Nightingale cried, 'Nay, pr'ythee, don't turn me into ridicule. The devil take me if I am not half mad, about this matter! My poor Nancy; O, Jones, Jones I

wish I had a fourtune in my own possession!'

'I heartily wish you had,' cries Jones; 'for if this be the case, I sincerely pity you both; but surely you don't intend to go away without taking your leave of her?'

'I would not,' answered Nightingale, 'undergo the pain of taking leave for ten thousand pounds: besides, I am convinced, instead of answering any good purpose, it would only serve to instance my poor Nancy the more. I beg, therefore, you would not mention a word of it to-day; and in the evening, or to-morrow morning I intend to depart.'

Jones promised he would not; and said, upon reflection, he thought, as he had determined, and was obliged to leave her, he took the most prudent method. He then told Nightingale, he should be very glad to lodge in the same house with him; and it was accordingly agreed between them, that Nightingale should procure him either the ground floor, or the two pair of stairs; for the young gentleman himself was to occupy that which was between them.

This Nightingale, of whom we shall be presently obliged to say a little more, was, in the ordinary transactions of life, a man of strict honour; and, what is more rare among young gentlemen of the town, one of strict honesty too; yet in affairs of love he was somewhat loofer in his morals: not that he was, even here, as void of principle as gentlemen sometimes are, and oftener affect to be; but it is certain he had been guilty of some indefensible treachery to women; and had, in a certain mystery, called Making Love, practised many deceits, which, if he had used in trade, he would have been counted the greatest villain upon earth.

But as the world, I know not well for what reason, agree to see this treachery in a better light, he was so far from being ashamed of his iniquities of this kind, that he gloried in them; and would often boast of his skill in gaining of women, and his triumphs over their hearts; for which he had before this time received some rebukes from Jones, who always expressed great bitterness against any misbehaviour to the fair part of the species; who, if considered, he said, as they ought to be, in the light of the dearest friends, were to be cultivated, honoured, and caressed, with the utmost love and tenderness; but, if regarded as enemies, were a conquest of which a man ought rather to be ashamed than to value himself upon it.

CHAP. V.

JONES this day are a pretty good dinner for a fick man; that is to fay, the larger half of a shoulder of mutton. In the afternoon, he received an invitation from Mrs. Miller to drink tea; for that good woman having Vol. III.

learnt, either by means of Partridge, or by some other means, natural or supernatural, that he had a connection with Mr. Allworthy, could not endure the thoughs of

parting with him in an angry manner.

Jones accepted the invitation; and no fooner was the tea-kettle removed, and the girls fent out of the room, than the widow, without much preface, began as follows. Well, there are very furprifing things happen in this world; but certainly it is a wonderful buliness, that I should have a relation of Mr. Allworthy in my house, and never known any thing of the matter. Alas Sir! you little imagine what a friend that best of gentlemen hath been to me and mine. Yes, Sir; I am not ashamed to own it: it is owing to his goodness that I did not long fince perish for want, and leave my poor little wretches, two destitute, helpless, friendless orphans, to the care, or

rather to the cruelty, of the world.

· You must know, Sir, though I am now reduced to get my living by letting lodgings, I was born and bred. a gentlewoman. My farther was an officer of the army. and died in a confiderable rank: but he lived up to his pay; and as that expired with him, his family, at his death, became beggars. We were three fifters: one of us had the good luck to die foon after the small-pox: a lady was so kind as to take the second out of charity, as the faid, to wait upon her. The mother of this lady had been a fervant to my grandmother; and having inherited a vast fortune from her father, which she had got by pawn-broking, was married to a gentleman of great estate and fashion. She used my fister so barbarously, often upbraiding her with her birth and poverty, calling her in derifion a gentlewoman, that I believe the at length broke the heart of the poor girl. In fhort, the likewise died within a twelvemonth after my father. Fortune thought proper to provide better for me; and within a month from his deceale I was married to a clergyman, who had been my lover a long time before, and who had been very ill used by my father on that account: for though my poor father could not give any of us a fingle shilling, yet he bred us up as delicately,

confidered us, and would have had us confidered ourfelves as highly, as if we had been the richest heiresses, But my dear husband forgot all this usage; and the moment we were become fatherless, he immediately renewed his addresses to me so warmly, that I, who always liked, and now more than ever efteemed him, foon complied. Five years did I live in a state of perfect happiness with that best of men, till at last-O cruel, cruel Fortune! that ever separated us!! that deprived me of the kindest of husbands, and my poor girls of the tenderest parent! O my poor girls! you never knew the bleffing which ye loft. I am ashamed, Mr. Jones, of this wowanish weakness; but I shall never mention him without tears.'- I ought rather, Madam, faid Jones, to be ashamed that I do not accompany you. - Well, Sir, continued she, I was now left a second time in a much worse condition than before: besides the terrible affliction I was to encounter, I had now two children to provide for; and was, if possible, more penny less than ever; when that great, that good, that glorious man, Mr. Allworthy, who had some little acquaintance with my husband, accidentally heard of my distress, and immediately writ this letter to me. Here, Sir, here it is: I put it into my pocket to shew it you. This is the letter Sir; I must and will read it to you.

· Madam.

I beartily condole with you on your late grievous loss, which your own good sense, and the excellent lessons you have learnt from the worthiest of men, will better enable you to bear, than any advice which I am capable of giving. Nor have I any doubt that you, whom I have beard to be the tenderest of mothers, will suffer any immoderate indulgence of grief to prevent you from discharging your duty to those poor infants, who now alone stand in need of your, tenderness.

However, as you must be supposed at present to be incapable of much worldly consideration, you will pardon my having ordered a person to wait on you, and to pay you twenty guineas, which I beg you will accept, till I have the pleasure of seeing you; and believe me to be,

Madam, &c.

This letter, Sir, I received within a fortnight after the irreparable loss I have mentioned; and within a fortnight afterwards, Mr. Allworthy, the bleffed Mr. Allworthy came to pay me a visit; when he placed me in

the house where you now see me, gave me a large sum of money to furnish it, and settled an annuity of sol. a year upon me, which I have constantly received ever fince. Judge then, Mr. Jones, in what regard I must hold a benefactor, to whom I owe the preservation of my life, and of those dear children, for whose sake alone my life is valuable. Do not, therefore, think me impertinent, Mr. Jones, (fince I must esteem one for whom I know Mr. Allworthy hath so much value,) if I beg you not to converse with these wicked women. You are a young gentleman, and do not know half their artful wiles. Do not be angry with me, Sir, for what I said upon account of my house; you must be sensible, it would be the ruin of my poor dear girls. Besides, Sir, you cannot but be acquainted, that Mr. Allworthy himself would never forgive my conniving at fuch matters, and particularly with you.'

"Upon my word, Madam, faid Jones, you need make no farther apology; nor do I in the least take any thing ill you have faid: but give me leave, as no one can have more value than myfelf for Mr. Allworthy, to deliver you from one mistake, which, perhaps, would not be altogether for his honour: I do assure you, I am no re-

lation of his.'

Alas, Sir! answered she, I know you are not. I know very well who you are; for Mr. Allworthy hath told me all: but I do assure you, had you been twenty times his son, he could not have expressed more regard for you, than he hath often expressed in my presence. You need not be ashamed, Sir, of what you are; I promise you no good person will esteem you the less on that account. No, Mr. Jones; the words "dishonourable birth" are nonsense, as my dear, dear husband, used to say, unless the word "dishonourable" be applied to the parents; for the children can derive no real dishonour from an act of which they are entirely innocent."

Here Jones heaved a deep figh, and then faid. 'Since I perceive, Madam, you really do know me, and Mr. Allworthy hath thought proper to mention my name to you, and fince you have been so explicit with me as to

your own affairs, I will acquaint you with some more circumstances concerning myself.' And these, Mrs. Miller having expressed great desire and curiosity to hear, he began, and related to her his whole history, without once

mentioning the name of Sophia.

There is a kind of sympathy in honest minds, by means of which they give an easy credit to each other. Mrs. Miller believed all which Jones told her to be true, and expressed much pity and concern for him. She was beginning to comment on the story, but Jones interrupted her; for as the hour of assignation now drew nigh, he began to stipulate for a second interview with the lady that evening, which he promised should be the last at her house, swearing, at the same time, that she was one of great distinction, and that nothing but what was entirely innocent was to pass between them; and I do sirmly believe he intended to keep his word.

Mrs. Miller was at length prevailed on; and Jones departed to his chamber, where he fat alone till twelve

o'clock; but no Lady Bellaston appeared.

As we have faid that this lady had a great affection for Jones, and as it must have appeared that she really had so, the reader may, perhaps, wonder at the first failure of her appointment, as she apprehended him to be confined by sickness, a season when friendship seems more to require such visits. This behaviour, therefore, in the lady, may by some be condemned as unnatural: but that is not our fault; for our business is only to record truth.

CHAP. VI.

Containing a Scene which we doubt not will affect all our readers.

MR. Jones closed not his eyes during all the former part of the night; not owing to any uneasiness which he conceived at being disappointed by Lady Bellaston; nor was Sophia herself, though most of his waking hours were justly to be charged to her account, the present cause of dispelling his slumbers. In fact, poor Jones was one of the best-natured sellows alive, and had all that weakness which is called compassion, and which dis-

stinguishes this imperfect character from that noble firmness of mind which rolls a man; as it were, within himself; and, like a polished bowl, enables him to run
through the world, without being once stopped by the
calamities which happen to others.—He could not help
therefore compassionating the situation of poor Nancy;
whose love for Mr. Nightingale seemed to him so apparent, that he was astonished at the blindness of the mother,
who had more than once the preceding evening remarked
to him the great change in the temper of her daughter:
who, from being, she said, one of the liveliest, merriest
girls in the worlds, was on a sudden become all gloom and
melancholy.

Sleep, however, at length got the beter of all resistance; and now, as if he had really been a deity, as the ancients imagined, and an offended one too, he seemed to enjoy his dear-bought conquest. To speak simply, and without any metaphor, Mr. Jones slept till eleven the next morning; and would, perhaps, have continued in the same quiet situation much longer, had not a violent uproar

awaked him.

Partridge was now fummoned; who, being asked what was the matter, answered, that there was a dreadful hurricane below stairs; that Miss Nancy was in fits; and that the other fifter and the mother were both crying and lamenting over her. Jones expressed much concern at this news; which Partridge endeavoured to relieve him, by faying, with a fmile, he fancied the young lady was in no danger of death; for that Susan (which was the name of the maid) had given him to understand, it was nothing more than a common affair. 'In thort, faid he, Miss Nancy hath a mind to be as wise as her mother; that's all. She was a little hungry, it feems, and fo fat down to dinner before grace was faid; and so there is a hild coming for the Foundling Hospital.'- 'Pr'ythee leave thy stupid jesting, cries Jones; is the misery of these poor wretches a subject of mirth? Go immediately to Mrs. Miller, and tell her, I beg leave-Stay, you will make some blunder: I will go myself; for she defired me to breakfast with her,' He then rose, and dressed

himself as fast as he could; and while he was dressing. Partridge, notwithstanding many severe rebukes, could not avoid throwing forth certain pieces of brutality, commonly called jefts, on this occasion. Jones was no fooner dreffed, than he walked down stairs, and knocking at the door, was presently admitted by the maid into the outward parlour, which was as empty of company as it was of any apparatus for eating. Mrs. Miller was in the inner room with her daughter, whence the maid presently brought a message to Mr. Jones, that her mistress hoped he would excuse the disappointment; but an accident had happened, which made it impossible for her to have the pleasure of his company at breakfast that day; and begged his pardon for not fending him up notice fooner. Jones defired the would give herfelf no trouble about any thing fo trifing as his disappointment; that he was heartily forry for the occasion; and that if he could be of any

fervice to her, she might command him.

He had fcarce spoke these words, when Mrs. Miller. who heard them all, fuddenly threw open the door, and coming out to him, in a flood of tears, said, O, Mr. Jones, you certainly are one of the best young men alive. I give you a thousand thanks for your kind offer of your fervice; but alas! Sir, it is out of your power to preferve my poor girl. O my child, my child! She is undone, the is ruined for ever!'- 'I hope, Madam, faid Jones, no villain.'- OMr. Jones, said she, that villain, who yesterday left my lodgings, hath betrayed my poor girl, hath deftroyed her! I know you are a man of honour. You have a good-a noble heart, Mr. Jones .-The actions, to which I have been myself a witness, could proceed from no other. I will tell you all: nay, indeed, it is impossible, after what hath happened, to keep it a secret. That Nightingale, that barbarous villain, hath undone my daughter! She is-the is-O, Mr. Jones! my girl is with child by him; and in that condition he hath deserted her. Here! here, Sir, is his cruel letter: read it Mr. Jones, and tell me if fuch another monster lives!'-The letter was as follows:

Dear Nancy,

As I find it impossible to mention to you what, I am afraid, will be no less spocking to you than it is to me, I have taken this method to inform you, that my father insifts upon my immediately paying my addresses to a young lady of fortune, whom he hath provided for my——— I need not write the detested word. Your own good understanding will make you sensible, how entirely I am obliged to an obedience, by which I shall be for ever excluded from your dear arms. The fondness of your mother may encourage you to trust her with the unhappy consequence of our love, which may be easily kept a secret from the world; and for which I will take care to provide, as I will for you. I wish you may feel less on this account than I have suffered: but summon all your fortitude to your assistance; and forgive and forget the man, whom nothing but the prospect of certain ruin could have forced to write this letter. I hid you forget me——I mean only as a lover: but the best of friends you shall ever find in your faithful, though unhappy,

When Jones had read this letter, they both stood filent during a minute, looking at each other: at last he began thus: 'I cannot express, Madam, how much I am shocked at what I have read; yet let me beg you, in one particular, to take the writer's advice. Consider the reputation of your daughter.'- It is gone, it is loft, Mr. Jones, cried she, as well as her innocence! She received the letter in a room full of company, and immediately fwooned away upon opening it : the contents were known to every one present. But the loss of her reputation, bad as it is, is not the worlt; I shall lose my child! The hath attempted twice to destroy herself already; and though she hath been hitherto prevented, vows the will not outlive it; nor could I myfelf outlive any accident of that nature. What then will become of my little Betfy, a helples infant orphan! And the poor little wretch will, I believe, break her heart at the miseries with which she sees her fifter and myself diffracted, while she is ignorant of the cause. O, 'tis the most senfible and best natured little thing. The barbarous cruel-hath destroyed us all. O my poor children ! Is this the reward of all my cares? Is this the fruit of all my prospects? Have I so cheerfully undergone all the labours and duties of a mother? Have I been fo tender of their infancy, so careful of their education?

Have I been toiling so many years, denying myself even the conveniencies of life, to provide some little sustenance for them, to lose one or both in such a manner!'- Indeed, Madam, said Jones, with tears in his eyes, I pity you from my foul. '- 'O, Mr. Jones ! answered she, even you, though I know the goodness of your heart, can have no idea of what I feel. The best, the kindest, the most dutiful of children! O, my poor Nancy, the darling of my foul! the delight of my eyes! the pride of my heart! too much, indeed, my pride; for to those toolish, ambitious hopes, rising from her beauty, I owe her ruin. Alas! I faw with pleasure the liking which this young man had for her. I thought it an honoura. ble affection, and flattered my foolish vanity with the thoughts of feeing her married to one fo much her fuperior. And a thousand times in my presence, nay, often in yours, he hath endeavoured to soothe and encourage there hopes by the most generous expressions of disinterested love, which he hath always directed to my poor girl; and which I, as well as she, believed to be real. Could I have believed that these were only snares laid to betray the innocence of my child, and for the rain of us all!' At these words, little Betsy came running into the room, crying, ' Dear mamma, for heaven's fake come to my fifter: for the is in another fit, and my coufin can't hold her.' Mrs. Miller immediately obeyed the fummons; but first ordered Betsy to stay with Mr. Jones, and begged him to entertain her a few minutes, faying, in the most pathetic voice- Good Heaven! let us preserve one of my children at least.'

Jones, in compliance with this request, did all he could to comfort the little girl, though he was, in reality, himfelf very highly affected with Mrs. Miller's story. He told her, her fister would be soon very well again: that, by taking on in that manner, she would not only make her sister worse, but make her mother ill too. 'Indeed, Sir, says she, I would not do any thing to hurt them for the world. I would burst my heart, rather than they should see me cry. But my poor sister can't see me cry: I am afraid she will never be able to see me cry any more.

Indeed, I can't part with her! Indeed I can't. And then poor mamma, too, what will become of her! She fays she will die too, and leave me: but I am resolved I won't be left behind.'—' And are you not asraid to die, my little Betsy? said Jones.'—' Yes, answered she; I was always asraid to die, because I must have left my mamma, and my sister; but I am not asraid of going any where with those I love.'

Jones was so pleased with this answer, that he eagerly kissed the child; and soon after Mrs. Miller returned, saying, she thanked heaven, Nancy was now come to herself. 'And now, Betty, says she, you may go in; for your sister is better, and longs to see you.' She then turned to Jones, and began to renew her apologies for

having disappointed him of his breakfast.

'I hope, Madam, said Jones, I shall have a more exquisite repast than any you could have provided for me. This, I assure you, will be the case, if I can do any service to this little family of love. But whatever success may attend my endeavours, I am resolved to attempt it. I am very much deceived in Mr. Nightingale, if, notwithstanding what hath happened, he hath not much goodness of heart at the bottom, as well as a very violent affection for your daughter. If this be the case, I think the picture which I shall lay before him will affect him. Endeavour, Madam, to comfort yourself, and Miss Nancy, as well as you can. I will go instantly in quest of Mr. Nightingale; and I hope to bring you good news.'

Mrs. Miller fell upon her knees, and invoked all the bleffings of heaven upon Mr. Jones; to which she afterwards added the most passionate expressions of gratitude. He then departed to find Mr. Nightingale; and the good woman returned to comfort her daughter, who was somewhat cheered at what her mother told her, and both

joined in resounding the praises of Mr. Jones.

CHAP. VII.

The Interview between Mr. Jones and Mr. Nighting ale.

THE good or evil we confer on others very often, I
believe, recoils on ourselves. For as men of a
benign disposition enjoy their own acts of beneficence

equally with those to whom they are done, so there are scarce any natures so entirely diabolical, as to be capable of doing injuries, without paying themselves some pangs for the ruin which they bring on their fellow-creatures.

Mr. Nightingale, at least, was not such a person. On the contrary, Jones found him in his new lodging, sitting melancholy by the fire, and silently lamenting the unhappy situation in which he had placed poor Nancy. He no sooner saw his friend appear, than he rose hastily to meet him; and after much congratulation, said, 'Nothing could have been more opportune than this kind visit; for I was never more in the spleen in my life.'

"I am forry, answered Jones, that I bring news very unlikely to relieve you: nay, what I am convinced must, of all others, shock you the most. However, it is necessary you should know it. Without farther perface, then, I come to you, Mr. Nightingale, from a worthy family, which you have involved in misery and ruin. Mr. Nightingale, changed colour at these words; but Jones, without regarding it, proceeded, in the liveliest manner, to paint the tragical story with which the reader was ac-

quainted in the last chapter-

Mr. Nightingale never once interrupted the narration, though he discovered violent emotions at many parts of it. But when it was concluded, after fetching a deep figh, he said, 'What you tell me, my friend, affects me in the tenderest manner. Sure there never was so cursed an accident as the poor girl's betraying my letter. Her reputation might otherwise have been safe and the affair might have remained a prosound secret; and then the girl might have gone off never the worse; for many such things happen in this town: and if the husband should suspect a little when it is too late, it will be his wiser conduct to conceal his suspicion both from his wife and the world.'

'Indeed, my friend, answered Jones, this could not have been the case with your poor Nancy. You have entirely gained her affections, that it is the loss of you, and not of her reputation, which afflicts her, and

will end in the destruction of her and her family. - Nav. for that matter, I promise you, cries Nightingale, she, hath my affections, so absolutely, that my wife, whoever the is to be, will have very little thare in them.'-And is it possible, then, said Jones, you can think of deserting her ?'- Why, what can I do? answered the other .- ' Ask Miss Nancy, replied Jones, warmly. In the condition to which you have reduced her, I fincerely think the ought to determine what reparation you fould make her. Her interest alone, and not yours, ought to be your sole consideration. But if you ask me what you shall do; what can you do less, cries Jones, than fulfil the expectations of her family, and her own? Nay. I fincerely tell you, they were mine too, ever fince I You will pardon me, if I prefirst saw you together. fume on the friendship you have favoured me with, moved as I am with compassion for those poor creatures: but your own heart will best suggest to you, whether you have never intended, by your conduct, to perfuade the mother, as well as the daughter, into an opinion, that you defigned honourably; and if so, though there may have been no direct promise of marriage in the case. I will leave to your own good understanding, how far you are bound to proceed.'

Nay I must not only confess what you have hinted, faid Nightingale; but I am afraid, even that very promise you mention, I have given.'- And can you, after owning that, faid lones, hefitate a moment?'- Confider, my friend, answered the other: I know you are a man of honour, and would advise no one to act contrary to its rules: if there were no other objection, can I, after this publication of her difgrace, think of fuch an alliance with honour?'- Undoubtedly, replied Jones; and the very best and truest honour, which is goodness. requires it of you. As you mention a scruple of this kind, you will give me leave to examine it. Can you. with honour, be guilty of having, under falle pretences, deceived a young woman and her family; and of having, by these means, treacherously robbed her of her innocence? Can you, with honour, be the knowing, the

wilful, nay, I must add, the artful contriver of the ruin of a human being? Can you, with honour, destroy the same, the peace, nay, probably, both the life and soul too, of this creature? Can honour bear the thought that this creature is a tender, helpless, desenceless, young woman? A young woman who loves, who doats on you, who dies for you; who hath placed the utmost confidence in your promises; and to that considence hath sa-crificed every thing which is dear to her? Can honour support such contemplations as these a moment!

'Common fense, indeed, said Nightingale, warrants all you say; but yet you well know the opinion of the world is so much the contrary, that was I to marry a whore, though my own, I should be ashamed of ever

shewing my face again.'

Fie upon it, Mr. Nightingale, said Jones, do not call her by fo ungenerous a name: when you promised to marry her, she became your wife; and she hath finned more against prudence than virtue. And what is this world, which you would be ashamed to face, but the vile, the foolish, and the profligate? Forgive me, if I fay, fuch a shame must proceed from false modesty, which always attends false honour as its shadow. But I am well affured, there is not a man of real sense and goodneis in the world, who would not honour and applaud the action. But admit no other would, would not your own heart, my friend, applaud it? And do not the warm, rapturous fensations, which we feel from the consciousnels of an honest, noble, benevolent action, convey more delight to the mind, than the undeserved praise of millions? Set the alternative fairly before your eyes. the one fide, fee this poor, unhappy, tender, believing girl, in the arms of her wretched mother, breathing her last. Hear her breaking heart, in agonies, fighing out your name; and lamenting, rather than accusing, the cruelty which weighs her down to destruction. Paint to your imagination the circumstances of her fond, defpairing parent, driven to madness, or, perhaps, to death, by the loss of her lovely daughter; view the poor, helpless, orphan infant; and, when your mind hath dwelt a VOL. III

moment only on fuch ideas, confider yourselves as the cause of all the ruin of this poor, little, worthy, defenceless family! On the other fide, confider yourself as relieving them from their temporary fufferings. with what joy, with what transports, that lovely creature will fly to your arms. See her blood returning to her pale cheeks, her fire to her languid eyes, and raptures to her tortured breaft! Confider the exultations of her mother; the happiness of all! Think of this little family, made, by one act of yours, completely happy! Think of this alternative; and fure I am mistaken in my friend, if it requires any long deliberation, whether he will fink these wretches down for ever; or, by one generous, noble resolution, raise them all from the brink of misery and despair, to the highest pitch of human hap-Add to this but one confideration more; the consideration that it is your duty so to do: that the mifery from which you will relieve these poor people, is the mifery which you yourfelf have wilfully brought upon them.

O my dear friend t cries Nightingale, I wanted not your eloquence to rouze me. I pity poor Nancy from my foul; and would willingly give any thing in my power, that no familiarities had ever passed between us. Nay, believe me, I had many struggles with my passion before I could prevail with myself to write that cruel letter, which hath caused all the misery in that unhappy family. If I had no inclinations to consult but my own, I would marry her to-morrow morning: I would by Heaven, but you will easily imagine how impossible it would be to prevail on my farther to consent to such a match: besides, he hath provided another for me; and to-morrow, by his express command, I am to wait on the lady.

'I have not the honour to know your father, faid Jones; but suppose he could be persuaded, would you yourself consent to the only means of preserving these poor people?'—' As eagerly as I would pursue my happiness, answered Nightingale; for I never shall find it in any other woman. O, my dear friend, could you imagine what I have felt within these twelve hours for my

poor girl, I am convinced she would not engross all your pity! Passion leads me only to her; and if I had any foolish scruples of honour, you have fully satisfied them: could my father be induced to comply with my desires, nothing would be wanting to complete my own

happiness, or that of my Nancy.'

Then I am resolved to undertake it, said Jones. You must not be angry with me, in whatever light it may be necessary to set this affair; which, you may depend on it, could not otherwise be long hid from him; for things of this nature make a quick progress, when once they get abroad, as this unhappily hath already. Besides, should any fatal accident follow, as upon my foul I am afraid will, unless immediately prevented, the public would ring of your name, in a manner which, if your father had common humanity, must offend him. If you will, therefore, tell me where I may find the old gentleman, I will not lose a moment in the bufiness; which, while I pursue, you cannot do a more generous action, than by paying a visit to the poor girl. You will find I have not exaggerated in the account I have given of the wretchedness of the family.'

Nightingale immediately consented to the proposal; and now having acquainted Jones with his father's lodging, and the coffee house where he would most probably find him, he hesitated a moment, and then said, 'My dear Tom, you are going to undertake an impossibility. If you knew my father, you would never think of obtaining his consent. Stay, there is one way—Suppose you told him I was already married, it might be easier to reconcile him to the fact after it was done; and, upon my honour, I am so affected with what you have said, and I love my Nancy so passionately, I almost wish it was done, whatever might be the consequence.'

Jones greatly approved the hint, and promifed to purfue it. They then separated; Nightingale to visit his Nancy, and Jones in quest of the old gentleman, Which passed between Jones and old Mr. Nighting ale; with the Arrival of a Person not yet mentioned in this History.

NoTWITHSTANDING the sentiment of the Roman sarist, which denies the divinity of fortune, and the opinion of Seneca to the same purpose, Cicero, who was, I believe, a wifer man than either of them, expressly holds the contrary; and certain it is, there are some incidents in life so very strange and unaccountable, that it seems to require more than human skill and foresight in producing them.

Of this kind was what now happened to Jones, who found Mr. Nightingale the elder in so critical a minute, that Fortune, if she was really worthy of all the worship she received at Rome, could not have contrived such another. In short, the old gentleman, and the father of the young lady whom he intended for his son, had been hard at it for many hours; and the latter was just now gone, and had left the sormer, delighted with the thoughts that he had succeeded in a long contention, which had been between the two fathers of the suture bride and bridegroom; in which both endeavoured to over-reach the other; and, as it not rarely happens in such cases, both had retreated sully satisfied of having obtained the victory.

This gentleman, whom Mr. Jones now visited, was what they call a man of the world; that is to say, a man who directs his conduct in this world, as one who, being fully persuaded there is no other, is resolved to make the most of this. In his early years, he had been bred to trade; but having acquired a very good fortune, he had lately declined his business; or to speak more properly, had changed it from dealing in goods, to dealing only in money; of which he had always a plentiful fund at command; and of which he knew very well how to make a very plentiful advantage, sometimes of the necessities of private men, and sometimes of those of the public. He had, indeed, conversed so entirely with money, that it may be almost doubted, whether he imagined there was

any other thing really existed in the world: this, at least, may be certainly averred, that he firmly believed

nothing else to have any real value.

The reader will, I fancy, allow, that Fortune could not have culled out a more improper person for Mr. Jones to attack with any probability of success; nor could the whimsical lady have directed this attack at a more unseasonable time.

As money, then, was always uppermeft in this gentleman's thoughts, so the moment he saw a stranger within his doors, it immediately occurred to his imagination, that such stranger was either come to bring him money, or to fetch it from him. And according as one or other of these thoughts prevailed, he conceived a favourable or unfavourable idea of the person who ap-

proached him.

Unluckily for Jones, the latter of these was the ascendant at present; for as a young gentleman had visited him the day before, with a bill from his fon, for a playdebt, he apprehended, at the first fight of Jones, that he was come on fuch another errand. Jones, therefore, had no fooner told him, that he was come on his fon's account, than the old gentleman, being confirmed in his suspicion, burst forth into an exclamation, that he would lose his labour.— Is it then possible, Sir, answered Jones, that you can guess my business?'- 'If I do guess it, replied the other, I repeat again to you, you will lose your labour. What, I suppose you are one of those sparks who lead my son into all those scenes of riot and debauchery which will be his destruction; but I shall pay no more of his bills, I promife you. I expect he will quit all fuch company for the future. If I had imagined otherwise, I should not have provided a wife for him; for I would be instrumental in the ruin of nobody." How, Sir! faid Jones, and was this lady of your providing?'- 'Pray, Sir, answered the old gentleman, how comes it to be of any concern of yours?'- ' Nay, dear Sir, replied Jones, be not offended that I interest myfelf in what regards your son's happiness, for whom I have so great an honour and value. It was upon that

H 3

very account I came to wait on you. I can't express the satisfaction you have given me by what you say; for I do assure you, your son is a person for whom I have the highest honour. Nay, Sir, it is not easy to express the esteem I have for you, who could be so generous, so good, so kind, so indulgent, to provide such a match for your son; a woman, who, I dare swear, will make him one of the happiest men upon earth.'

There is scarce any thing which so happily introduces men to our good liking, as having conceived some alarm at their first appearance; when once those apprehensions begin to vanish, we soon sorget the fears which they occasioned, and look on ourselves as indebted for our present ease to those very persons who at first raised our

fears.

Thus it happened to Nightingale; who no fooner found that Jones had no demand on him, as he suspected, than he began to be pleased with his presence.—' Pray, good Sir, said he, be pleased to fit down. I do not remember to have ever had the pleasure of seeing you before: but if you are a friend of my fon, and have any thing to fay concerning this young lady, I shall be glad to hear you. As to her making him happy, it will be his own fault if the doth not. I have discharged my duty, in taking care of the main article. She will bring him a fortune capable of making any reasonable, prudent, fober man, happy.'- Undoubtedly, cries Jones; for the is in herfelf a fortune; so beautiful, so genteel, so sweet tempered, and so well educated: she is, indeed, a most accomplished young lady; fings admirably well, and hath a most delicate hand at the harpsicord.'- 'I did not know any of these matters, answered the old gentleman, for I never faw the lady; but I do not like her the worse for what you tell me; and I am the better pleased with her father for not laying any stress on these qualifications in our bargain. I shall always think it a proof of his understanding. A filly fellow would have brought in these articles as an addition to her fortune; but to give him his due, he never mentioned any fuch matter; though, to be fure, they are no disparagements

to a woman.'- 'I do affure you, Sir, cries Jones, the hath them all in the most eminent degree. For my part, I own, I was afraid you might have been a little back ward, a little less inclined to the match: for your son told me, you had never seen the lady; therefore, I came, Sir, in that case, to entreat you, to conjure you, as you value the happiness of your son, not to be averse to his match with a woman who hath not only all the good qualities I have mentioned, but many more.'- 'If that was your business, Sir, said the old gentleman, we are both obliged to you; and you may be perfectly easy: for I give you my word, I was very well fatisfied with her fortune.'- Sir, answered Jones, I honour you every moment more and more. To be so easily satisfied, so very moderate on that account, is a proof of the foundness of your understanding, as well as the nobleness of your mind.'- Not so very moderate, young gentleman! not so very moderate! answered the father.'- Still more and more noble, replied Jones, and give me leave to add, fenfible; for fure it is little less than madness to confider money as the fole foundation of happiness. Such a woman as this, with her little, her nothing of a fortune-'I find, cries the old gentleman, you have a pretty just epinion of money, my friend; or else you are better acquainted with the person of the lady than with her circumstances. Why, pray, what fortune do you imagine this lady to have?'- What fortune? cries Jones, why too contemptible a one to be named for your fon.'-Well, well, faid the other, perhaps he might have done better.'- That I deny, faid Jones; for she is one of the best of women.'- 'Aye, aye, but in point of fortune I mean, answered the other. And yet, as to that now, how much do you imagine your friend is to have?" - 'How much, cries Jones; how much? Why, at the utmost, perhaps, two hundred pounds.'- Do you mean to banter me, young gentleman?' faid the father, a little angry.- 'No, upon' my foul, answered Jones, I am in earnest; nay, I believe I have gone to the utmost farthing. If I do the lady an injury, I alk her pardon.' - Indeed you do, cries the father. I am certain the

hath fifty times that fum; and the shall produce fifty to that, before I consent that she shall marry my son.'-'Nay, faid Jones, it is too late to talk of consent now. If the hath not fifty farthings, your fon is married.'-'My fon married, answered the old gentleman with furprise'-' Nay, said Jones, I thought you was acquainted with it.'- 'My fon married to Miss Harris! answered he again.'- To Miss Harris! said Jones; no, Sir, to Mils Nancy Miller, the daughter of Mrs. Miller, at whose house he lodged; a young lady who, though her mother is reduced to let lodgings-'- Are you bantering, or are you in earnest,' cries the father, with a most solemn voice.—' Indeed, Sir, answered Jones, I scorn the character of a banterer: I came to you in most serious earnest, imagining, as I find true, that your son had never dared to acquaint you with a match so much inferior to him in point of fortune, though the reputation of the lady will fuffer it no longer to remain a fecret.'

While the father stood like one struck suddenly dumb at this news, a gentleman came suddenly into the room,

and faluted him by the name of brother.

But though these two were in consanguinity so nearly related, they were in their dispositions almost the opposites to each other. The brother, who now arrived, had likewise been bred to trade, in which he no sooner saw himself worth six thousand pounds, than he purchased a small estate with the greatest part of it, and retired into the country; where he married the daughter of an unbeneficed clergyman, a young lady who, though she had neither beauty nor fortune, had recommended herself to his choice entirely by her good humour, of which she possessed a very large share.

With this woman he had, during twenty-five years, lived a life more resembling the model which certain poets ascribe to the golden age, than any of those patterns which are furnished by the present times. By her he had four children, but none of them arrived at maturity, except only one daughter, whom, in vulgar language, he and his wife had spoiled; that is, had edu-

cated with the utmost tenderness and fondness; which she returned to such a degree, that she had actually refused a very extraordinary match with a gentleman a little turned of forty, because she could not bring herself to

part with her parents.

The young lady, whom Mr. Nightingale had intended for his fon, was a near neighbour of his brother, and an acquaintance of his niece; and, in reality, it was upon the account of this projected match that he was now come to town; not, indeed, to forward, but to diffuade his brother from a purpose, which, he conceived, would inevitably ruin his nephew; for he foresaw no other event from an union with Miss Harris, not-withstanding the largeness of her fortune; as neither her person nor mind seemed, to him, to promise any kind of matrimonial felicity; for she was very tall, very thin, very ugly, very affected, very silly, and very ill-natured.

His brother, therefore, no sooner mentioned the marriage of his nephew with Miss Miller, than he expressed the utmost satisfaction; and when the father had very bitterly revised his son, and pronounced sentence of beggary on him, the uncle began in the following manner—

'If you was a little cooler, brother, I would ask you whether you love your son for his sake, or for your own. You would answer, I suppose, and so I suppose you think, for his sake, and doubtless it is his happiness which

you intend in the marriage you propose for him.

Now, brother, to prescribe rules of happiness to others, hath always appeared to me very absurd; and to insist on doing this, very tyrannical. It is a vulgar error, I know; but it is nevertheless an error: and if this be absurd in other things, it is mostly so in the affair of marriage, the happiness of which depends entirely on the affection which subsists between the parties.

'I have, therefore, always thought it unreasonable in parents to desire to chuse for their children on this occasion; since, to force affection, is an impossible attempt:

nay, so much doth love abhor force, that I know not whether, through an unfortunate, but incurable, perverseness in our natures, it may not be even impatient of

perfuation.

'It is, however, true, that though a parent will not, I think wifely, prescribe, he ought to be consulted on this occasion; and in strictness, perhaps, should at least have a negative voice. My nephew, therefore, I own, in marrying without asking your advice, hath been guilty of a fault. But, honeftly speaking, brother, have you not a little promoted this fault? Have not your frequent declarations on this subject given him a moral certainty of your refusal, where there was any deficiency in point of fortune! Nay, doth not your present anger arise folely from that deficiency? And if he hath failed in his duty here, did you not as much exceed that authority when you absolutely bargained with him for a woman without his knowledge, whom you yourfelf never faw, and whom, if you had feen and known as well as I, it must have been madness in you to have ever thought of bringing into your family?

Still I own my nephew in a fault; but, surely, it is not an unpardonable tault. He hath acted, indeed, without your consent, in a matter in which he ought to have asked it; but it is in a matter in which his interest is principally concerned. You yourself must and will acknowledge, that you consulted his interest only; and if he unfortunately differed from you, and hath been mistakes in his notion of happiness, will you, brother, if you love your son, carry him still wider from the point? Will you increase the ill consequences of his simple choice? Will you endeavour to make an event certain misery to him, which may accidentally prove so? In a word, brother, because he hath put it out of your power to make his circumstances as affluent as you would, will you distress them as much as you

can?"

By the force of the true catholic faith, St. Antony won upon the fishes. Orpheus and Amphion went a little farther, and, by the charms of music, enchanted

things merely inanimate. Wonderful both! But neither history nor fable have ever yet ventured to record an instance of any one who, by force of argument and reason,

hath triumphed over habitual avarice.

Mr. Nightingale, the father, instead of attempting to answer his brother, contented himself with only observing that they had always differed in their sentiments concerning the education of their children. I wish, said he, brother, you would have confined your care to your own daughter, and never have troubled yourself with my son; who hath, I believe, as little profited by your precepts as by your example. For young Nightingale was his uncle's godson, and had lived more with him than with his father: so that the uncle had often declared, he loved his nephew almost equally with his own child.

Jones fell into raptures with this good gentleman; and when, after much persuasion, they found the father grew still more and more irritated, instead of appeased, Jones conducted the uncle to his nephew at the house of Mrs. Miller.

CHAP. IX.

Containing frange Matters.

A T his return to his lodgings, Jones found the fituation of affairs greatly altered from what they had been in at his departure. The mother, the two daughters, and young Mr. Nightingale, were now fat down to supper together, when the uncle was at his own defire introduced without any ceremony into the company; to all of whom he was well known, for he had several times visited his nephew at that house.

The old gentleman immediately walked up to Miss Nancy, faluted and wished her joy, as he did afterwards the mother and the other fister; and lastly, he paid the proper compliments to his nephew, with the same good humour and courtesy, as if his nephew had married his equal or superior in fortune, with all the previous requi-

fites first performed.

Miss Nancy and her supposed husband both turned ale, and looked rather foolish than otherwise on the oc

casion; but Mrs. Miller took the first opportunity of withdrawing; and having sent for Jones into the dining-roon, she threw herself at his feet, and, in a most passionate flood of tears, called him her good angel, the preserver of her poor little family, with many other respectful and endearing appellations, and made him every acknowledgment which the highest benefit can extract

from the most grateful heart.

After the first gust of her passion was a little over. which she declared, if she had not vented, would have burst her, she proceeded to inform Mr. Jones, that all matters were settled between Mr. Nightingale and her daughter, and that they were to be married the next morning; at which Mr. Jones having expressed much pleasure, the poor woman fell again into a fit of joy and thanksgiving, which he at length with difficulty filenced; and prevailed on her to return with him back to the company, whom they found in the fame good humour in which they had left them. This little fociety now passed two or three very agreeable hours together; in which the uncle, who was a very great lover of his bottle, had so well plied his nephew, that this latter, though not drunk, began to be somewhat flustered: and now Mr. Nightingale, taking the old gentleman with him up stairs, into the apartment he had lately occupied, unbosomed himself as follows:-

'As you have been always the best and kindest of uncles to me, and as you have shewn such unparalleled goodness in forgiving this match, which to be sure, may be thought a little improvident, I should never forgive myself, if I attempted to deceive you in any thing.' He then confessed the truth and opened the

whole affair.

'How, Jack! faid the old gentleman, and are you really then not married to this young woman? No, upon my honour, answered Nightingale. I have told you the simple truth.'—' My dear boy, cries the uncle, kissing him, I am heartily glad to hear it. I never was better pleased in my life. If you had been married, I should have assisted you as much as was in my power, to have made the best of a bad matter; but there is a great diffe-

sence between confidering a thing which is already done, and irrecoverable, and that which is yet to do .-Let your reason have fair play, Jack; and you will see this match in so foolish and preposterous a light, that there will be no need of any diffuative arguments.'-'How, Sirl replies young Nightingale, is there this difference between having already done an act, and being in honour engaged to do it?'- 'Pugh! faid the uncle. honour is a creature of the world's making; and the world hath the power of a creator over it, and may govern and direct it as they please. Now, you well know how trivial these breaches of contract are thought; even the groffest make but the wonder and conversation of a day. Is there a man who will be afterwards more backward in giving you his fifter or daughter? Or is there any fifter or daughter who would be more backward to receive you? Honour is not concerned in these engagements.'-Pardon me, dear Sir, cries Nightingale, I can never think so; and not only honour, but conscience and humanity, are concerned. I am well fatisfied, that was I now to disappoint the young creature, her death would be the consequence, and I should look on myself as her murderer; nay, as her murderer by the cruelest of all methods-by breaking her heart.'- 'Break her heart, indeed! No, no, Jack, cries the uncle, the hearts of women are not fo foon broke; they are tough, boy, they are tough.'- But, Sir, answered Nightingale, my own affections are engaged; and I never could be happy with any other woman. How often have I heard you fay, that children should be always suffered to choose for themfelves, and that you would let my coufin Harriet do fo.' - Why, aye, replied the old gentleman, fo I would have them; but then I would have them chuse wisely. Indeed, Jack, you must and shall leave this girl. - Indeed, uncle, cries the other, I must and will have her. '- You will, young gentleman! faid the uncle: I did not expect fuch a word from you. I should not wonder if you had used such language to your father, who hath always treated you like a dog, and kept you at the distance which a tyrant preserves over his subjects; but I, who QL. III.

have lived with you upon an equal footing, might furely expect better usage; but I know how to account for it all; It is all owing to your prepofterous education, in which I have had too little share. There is my daughter, now, whom I have brought up as my friend, never doth any thing without my advice, nor ever refuses to take it, when I give it her.'- You have never yet given her advice in an affair of this kind, faid Nightingale; for I am greatly mistaken in my cousin, if she would be very ready to obey even your most positive commands in abandoing her inclinations.'- Don't abuse my girl, anfwered the old gentleman, with some emotion; don't abuse my Harriet! I have brought her up to have no inclinations contrary to my own. By fuffering her to do whatever the pleases, I have inured her to a habit of being pleased to do whatever I like.'- Pardon me, Sir, said Nightingale; I have not the least design to reflect on my cousin, for whom I have the greatest esteem; and, indeed, I am convinced you will never put her to fo severe a trial. or lay fuch hard commands on her, as you would do on me. But, dear Sir, let us return to the company; for they will begin to be uneasy at our long absence. I must beg one favour of my dear uncle; which is, that he would not fay any thing to shock the poor girl or her mother .- 'O you need not fear me, answered he, I understand myself too well to affront women; so I will readily grant you that favour; and, in return, I must expect another of you.'- There are but few of your commands, Sir, faid Nightingale, which I shall not very chearfully obey.'- Nay, Sir, I ask nothing, said the uncle, but the honour of your company home to my . lodging, that I may reason the case a little more fully with you: for I would, if possible, have the satisfaction of preferving my family, notwithstanding the headstrong folly of my brother, who, in his own opinion, is the wifest man in the whole world."

Nightingale, who knew his uncle to be as headstrong as his father, submitted to attend him home; and then they both returned back into the room, wher the old

gentleman promifed to carry himself with the same decorum which he had before maintained.

CHAP. X.

A Short Chapter, which concludes the Book.

HE long absence of the uncle and nephew had occasion some disquiet in the minds of all whom they had left behind them; and the more as, during the preceding dialogue, the uncle had more than once elevated his voice fo as to be heard down stairs; which, though they could not distinguish what he faid, had caused some evil foreboding in Nancy and her mother, and even in Jones himfelf.

When the good company therefore again affembled. there was a visible alteration in all their faces; and the good humour which, at their last meeting, universally shone forth in every countenance, was now changed into a much less agreeable aspect. It was a change, indeed, common enough to the weather in this climate, from fun-

shine to clouds, from June to December.

This alteration was not, however, greatly remarked by any present; for as they were all now endeavouring to conceal their own thoughts, and to act a part, they became all too bufily engaged in the scene to be spectators of it. Thus, neither the uncle nor nephew faw any symptoms of suspicion in the mother or daughter; nor did the mother or daughter remark the over-acted complaifance of the old man, nor the counterfeit fatisfaction which grinned in the features of the young one.

Something like this, I believe, frequently happens, where the whole attention of two friends being engaged in the part which each is to act, in order to impose on the other, neither fees nor suspects the art practifed against himself; and thus the thrust of both (to borrow no improper metaphor on the occasion) alike takes place.

From the fame reason, it is no unusual thing for both parties to be over-reached in a bargain, though the one must be always the greater loser; as was he who fold a blind horse, and received a bad note in payment,

Our company, in about half an hour, broke up, and the uncle carried off his nephew; but not before the latter had affured Miss Nancy, in a whisper, that he would attend her early in the morning, and fulfil all his

engagements.

Iones, who was the least concerned in this scene, saw the most. He did, indeed, suspect the very fact; for, besides observing the great alteration in the behaviour of the uncle, the distance he assumed, and his overstrained civility to Miss Nancy, the carrying off a bridegroom from his bride at that time of night, was so extraordinary a proceeding, that it could only be accounted for by imagining that young Nightingale had revealed the whole truth; which the apparent openne's of his temper, and his being fluffered with liquour, made too probable.

While he was reasoning with himself, whether he should acquaint these poor people with his suspicion, the maid of the house informed him, that a gentlewoman defired to speak with him. He went immediately out, and taking the candle from the maid, ushered his visitant up stairs; who, in the person of Mrs. Honour, acquainted him with fuch dreadful news concerning his Sophia, that he immediately loft all consideration for every other person, and his whole stock of compassion was entirely swallowed up in reflections on his own mifery, and on that of his unfortunate angel.

What this dreadful matter was, the reader will be informed, after we have first related the many preceding steps which produced it; and those will be the subject

of the following book.

BOOK XV.

In which the History advances about Two Days. CHAP. I.

Too short to need a Preface.

HERE is a fet of religious, or rather moral writers, who teach that virtue is the certain road to happiness, and vice to misery, in this world. A very wholeforme and comfortable doctrine; and to which we have but one objection, namely, that it is not true.

Indeed, if by virtue these writers mean the exercise of those cardinal virtues, which, like good housewives, stay at home, and mind only the business of their own family, I shall very readily concede the point: for so surely do all these contribute and lead to happiness, that I could almost wish, in violation of all the ancient and modern sages, to call them rather by the name of wishom than by that of virtue; for with regard to this life, no system, I conceive, was ever wiser, than that of the ancient Epicureans, who held this wissom to constitute the chief good; nor foolisher than that of their opposites, those modern Epicures, who place all felicity in the abundant gratification of every sensual appetite.

But if by virtue is meant (as I almost think it ought) a certain relative quality, which is always busying itself without doors, and seems as much interested in pursuing the good of others as its own, I cannot so easily agree that this is the surest way to human happiness; because I am afraid we must then include poverty and contempt, with all the mischiefs which backbiting, envy, and ingratitude, can bring on mankind, in our idea of happiness: nay, sometimes, perhaps, we should be obliged to wait upon the said happiness to a gaol; since many, by the above virtue, have brought them-

felves thither.

I have not now leisure to enter upon so large a field of speculation as here seems opening upon me; my defign was, to wipe off a doctrine that lay in my way; since, while Mr. Jones was acting the most virtuous part imaginable, in labouring to preserve his fellow-creatures from destruction, the devil, or some other evil spirit, one perhaps cloathed in human sless, was hard at work to make him compleatly miserable in the ruin of his Sophia.

This, therefore, would feem an exception to the above rule, if, indeed, it was a rule; but as we have, in our voyage through life, feen so many other exceptions to it, we chuse to dispute the doctrine on which it is founded, which we do not apprehend to be christian, which we are convinced is not true, and which is, indeed, destruc-

tive of one of the noblest arguments that reason alone can

furnish for the belief of immortality.

But as the reader's curiofity (if he hath any) must be now awake and hungry, we shall provide to feed it as fast as we can.

CHAP. II.

In which is opened a very black design against Sophia.

I Remember a wife old gentleman, who used to say, 'When children are doing nothing, they are doing mischief.' I will not enlarge this quaint saying to the most beautiful part of the creation in general; but so far I may be allowed, that when the effects of semale jealously do not appear openly in their proper colours of rage and sury, we may suspect that mischievous passion to be at work privately, and attempting to undermine what it doth not attack above ground.

This was exemplified in the conduct of Lady Bellaston; who, under all the smiles which she wore in her countenance, concealed much indignation against Sophia; and as she plainly saw, that this young lady stood between her and the full indulgence of her desires, she resolved to get rid of her by some means or other; nor was it long before a very favourable opportunity of accomplishing

this presented itself to her.

The reader may be pleased to remember, that when Sophia was thrown into that consternation at the play-house, by the wit and humour of a set of young gentlemen who call themselves the Town, we informed him, that she had put herself under the protection of a young nobleman, who had very safely conducted her to her chair.

This nobleman, who frequently visited Lady Bellaston, had more than once seen Sophia there, since her arrival in town, and had conceived a very great liking to her; which liking (as beauty never looks more amiable than in distress) Sophia had in this fright so increased, that he might now, without any great impropriety, be said to be actually in love with her.

It may easily be believed, that he would not suffer so handsome an occasion of improving his acquaintance with the beloved object, as now offered itself, to elapse; when even good breeding alone might have prompted him to pay her a visit.

The next morning, therefore, after this accident, he waited on Sophia, with the usual compliments, and hopes that she had received no harm from her last night's

adventure.

As love, like fire, when once thoroughly kindled, isfoon blown into a flame, Sophia, in a very thert time, compleated her conquest. Time now flew away unperceived, and the noble lord had been two hours in company with the lady, before it entered into his head that he had made too long a visit. Though this circumstance alone would have alarmed Sophia, who was somewhat more a mistress of computation at present, she had, indeed, much more pregnant evidence from the eyes of her lover of what passed within his bosom: nay, though he did not make any open declaration of his passion, yet many of his expressions were rather too warm, and too tender, to have been imputed to complaisance, even in the age when such complaisance was in fashion: the very reverse of which is well known to be the reigning mode at present.

Lady Bellaston had been apprized of his lordship's visit at his first arrival; and the length of it very well satisfied her, that things went on as she wished; and as, indeed, she had suspected, the second time she saw this young couple together. This business she rightly, I think, concluded, that she should by no means forward by mixing in the company while they were together: she, therefore, ordered her servants, that when my lord was going, they should tell him, she desired to speak with him; and employed the intermediate time in meditating how best to accomplish a scheme, which she made no doubt but his lordship would very readily embrace the

execution of.

Lord Fellamar (for that was the title of this young nobleman) was no fooner introduced to her ladyship, than she attacked him in the following strain. 'Bless me, my lord! are you here yet! I thought my servants

had made a mistake, and let you go away; and I wanted to see you about an affair of some importance.'- Indeed, Lady Bellaston, said he, I don't wonder you are aftonished at the length of my visit: for I have stayed above two hours, and I did not think I had staid above half one.'- What am I to conclude from thence, my lord? faid she. The company must be very agreeable which can make time flide away fo very deceitfully.'-Upon my honour, said he, the most agreeable I ever faw. Pray tell me, Lady Bellaston, who is this blazing ftar which you have produced among us all of a fudden?" - What blazing star, my lord?' said she, affecting a furprise. I mean, said he, the lady I saw bere the other day, whom I had last night in my arms at the play-house, and to whom I have been making that unreasonable visit.'- O, my cousin Western! says she. Why, that blazing star, my lord, is the daughter of a country booby squire, and hath been in town about a fortnight, for the first time.'- Upon my foul, said he, I should swear she had been bred in a court; for, besides her beauty, I never saw any thing so genteel, so sensible, polite.'- O brave! cries the lady; my cousin hath you, I find.'- Upon my honour, answered he, I wish she had : for I am in love with her to distraction.'- Nay, my lord, faid she, it is not wishing yourfelf very ill neither, for the is a very great fortune: I affure you, the is an only child, and her tather's estate is a good three thousand a year.'- Then I can affure you, Madam, answered the lord, I think her the best match in England.'- Indeed, my lord, replied the, if you like her, I heartily wish you had her.'- If you think so kindly of me, Madam, said he, as she is a relation of yours, will you do me the honour to propose it to her father?'- 'And are you really then in earnest?' cries the lady, with an affected gravity. 'I hope, Madam, answered he, you have a better opinion of me, than to imagine I would jest with your ladyship in an affair of this kind.'- 'Indeed, then, faid the lady, Iwill most readily propose your lordship to her father; and I can, I believe, affure you of his joyful acceptance of

HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING. the proposal: but there is a bar, which I am almost ashamed to mention; and yet it is one you will never be able to conquer. You have a rival, my lord; and a rival who, though I blush to name him, neither you, ner all the world, will ever be able to conquer !'- 'Upon my word, Lady Bellaston, cries he, you have struck a damp to my heart, which hath almost deprived me" of being.'-Fie! my lord, faid the, I thould rather hope I had ftruck fire into you. A lover! and talk of damps in your heart! I rather imagined you would have asked your rival's name, that you might have immediately entered the lifts with him.'- I promise you, madam, answered he, there are very few things I would not undertake for your charming coufin: but pray, who is this happy man?'-Why he is, tays the, what I am forry to fay most hap! py men with us are, one of the lowest fellows in the world. He is a beggar, a bastard, a foundling, a fellow in meaner circumstances than one of your lordship's footmen.'- 'And is it possible, cried he, that a young creature, with fuch perfections should think of bestowing herfelf so unworthily !'- Alas! my lord, answered the, confider the country; the bane of all young women is the country. There they learn a fet of romantic notions of love, and I know not what folly, which this town, and good company, can icarce eradicate in a whole winter.'- Indeed, Madam, replied my lord, your coufin is of too immense a value to be thrown away; such ruin as this must be prevented.'- Alas! cries she, my lord, how can it be prevented? The family have already done all in their power; but the girl is, I think, intoxicated, and nothing less than ruin will content her. And, to deal more openly with you, I expect every day to hear the is run away with him.'- What you tell me, Lady Bellastone, answered his lordship, affects me most tenderly; and only raises my compassion, instead of lessening my adoration of your cousin. Some means must be found to preserve so inestimable a jewel. Hath your ladyship endeavoured to reason with her? Here the lady effected a laugh, and cried-' My dear, lord, fure you know us better than to talk of reasoning a

young woman out of her inclinations! These inestima. ble jewels are as deaf as the jewels they wear: time. my lord, time is the only medicine to cure their folly : but this is a medicine, which I am certain she will not take; nay, I live in hourly horrors on her account. In fhort, nothing but violent methods will do.'- What is to be done? cries my lord. What methods are to be taken? Is there any method upon earth? O Lady Bellafon! there is nothing which I would not undertake for fuch a reward.'- 'I really know not, answered the lady, after a pause; and then pausing again, she cried out-' Upon my foul, I am at my wit's end on this girl's account. If the can be preserved, something must be done immediately; and, as I fay, nothing but violent methods will do. If your lordthip hath really this attachment to my cousin, (and to do her justice, except in this filly inclination, of which she will soon see her folly, the is every way deserving,) I think there may be one way; indeed, it is a very disagreeable one, and what I am almost afraid to think of. It requires great spirit I promise vou.'- I am not conscious, Madam, faid he, of any defect there; nor am I, I hope, suspected of any fuch. It must be an egregious defect, indeed, which could make me backward on this occasion.'-Nay, my lord, answered she, I am far from doubting you. I am much more inclined to doubt my own courage; for I must run a monstrous risque. In short, I must place such a confidence in your honour, as a wise woman will scarce ever place in a man on any conside-In this point, likewise, my lord very well fatisfied her; for his reputation was extremely clear, and common fame did him no more than justice, in speaking well of him. 'Well then, faid she, my lord-I-I vow, I can't bear the apprehension of it. No; it must not be: at least every other method shall be tried. Can you get rid of your engagements, and dine here to-day? Your lordship will have an opportunity of seeing a little more of Miss Western. I promise you, we have no time to lose. Here will be nobody but Lady Betty, and Miss Eagle, and Colonel Hampstead, and Tom Edwards:

they will all go foon, and I shall be at home to nobody: then your lordship may be a little more explicit. Nay, I will contrive some method to convince you of her attachment to this fellow.'— My lord made proper compliments, accepted the invitation, and then they parted to dress; it being now past three in the morning, or, to reckon by the old style, in the asternoon.

CHAP. III.

A farther Explanation of the foregoing Design.

THOUGH the reader may have long fince concluded Lady Bellaston to be a member (and no inconsiderable one) of the great world, she was, in reality, a very considerable member of the Little World; by which appellation was distinguished a very worthy and honourable society, which not long since flourished in this king-

dom.

Among other good principles upon which this society was founded, there was one very remarkable: for, as it was a rule of an honourable club of heroes, who assembled at the close of the late war, that all the members should every day fight once at least, so it was in this, that every member should within the twenty-four hours, tell at least one merry fib, which was to be propagated

by all the brethren and fifterhood.

Many idle stories were told about this society, which, from a certain quality, may be, perhaps, not unjustly supposed to have come from the society themselves; as, that the devil was the president: and that he sat in person in an elbow chair at the upper end of the table: but, upon very strict enquiry, I find there is not the least truth in any of those tales; and that the assembly consisted, in reality, of a set of very good sort of people; and the sibs which they propagated were of a harmless kind, and tended only to produce mirth and good humour.

Edwards was likewise a member of this comical society. To him, therefore, Lady Bellaston applied as a proper instrument for her purpose, and furnished him with a fib, which he was to vent whenever the lady gave him her cue; and this was not to be done till the evening, when all the company but Lord Fellamar and himself were gone, and while they were engaged in a rubber at whist.

To this time, then, which was between seven and eight in the evening, we will convey our reader; when Lady Bellaston, Lord Fellamar, Miss Western, and Tom, being engaged at whist, and in the last game of their rubbers, Tom received his cue from Lady Bellaston, which was—'I protest, Tom, you are grown into-lerable lately: you used to tell us all the news of the town, and now you know no more of the world than if you lived out of it.'

Mr. Edwards then began as follows: 'The fault is not mine, Madam; it lies in the dulness of the age, that doth nothing worth talking of. O la! though, now I think on't, there hath a terrible accident befallen poor Colonel Wilcox. Poor Ned! You know him, my lord; every body knows him; faith, I am very

much concerned for him !'

What is it, pray?' fays Lady Bellaston.

'Why, he hath killed a man this morning in a duel, that's all.'

His lordship, who was not in the secret, asked gravely whom he had killed? To which Edwards answered, A young fellow we none of us know; a Somersetshire lad, just come to town; one Jones his name is, a near relation to one Mr. Allworthy, of whom your lordship, I believe, hath heard. I saw the lad lie dead in a coffee house. Upon my soul, he is one of the finest

corpses I ever saw in my life!'

Sophia, who just began to deal as Tom had mentioned that a man was killed, stopped her hand, and listened with attention, (for all stories of that kind affected her;) but no sooner had he arrived at the latter part of the story, than she began to deal again: and having dealt three cards to one, and seven to another, and ten to a third, at last dropped the rest from her hand, and fell back in her chair.

The company behaved as usual on these occasions.—
The usual disturbance ensued; the usual affistance was

fummoned; and Sophia, at last, as it is usual, returned again to life; and was soon after, at her earnest desire, led to her own apartment; where, at my lord's request, Lady Bellaston acquainted her with the truth, attempted to carry it off as a jest of her own, and comforted her with repeated assurances, that neither his lordship, nor Tom, though she had taught him she story, were in the true secret of the affair.

There was no farther evidence necessary to convince Lord Fellamar how justly the case had been represented to him by Lady Bellaston; and now, at her return into the room, a scheme was laid between these two noble persons, which, though it appeared in no very heinous light to his lordship, (as he faithfully promised, and faithfully resolved too, to make the lady all the subsequent amends in his power by marriage,) yet many of our readers, we doubt not, will see it with just detestation.

The next evening, at seven, was appointed for the fatal purpose; when Lady Bellaston undertook that Sophia should be alone, and his lordship should be introduced to her. The whole samily were to be regulated for the purpose; most of the servants dispatched out of the house; and Mrs. Honour, to prevent suspicion, was left with her mistress till his lordship's arrival, Lady Bellaston herself was to engage her in an apartment as distant as possible from the scene of the intended mischief, and out of the hearing of Sophia.

Matters being thus agreed on, his lordship took his leave, and her ladyship retired to rest, highly pleased with a project, of which she had no reason to doubt the success; and which promised so effectually to remove Sophia from being any future obstruction to her amour with Jones, by means of which she should never appear to be guilty, even if the fact appeared to the world: but this she made no doubt of preventing, by huddling up a marriage, to which she thought the ravished Sophia would easily be brought to consent, and at which all the rest of the family would rejoice.

Vol. III.

But affairs were not in so quiet a situation in the bofom of the other conspirator: his mind was tossed in all the distracting anxiety so nobly described by Shakespear—

Between the acting of a dreadful thing,
And the first motion, all the interim is

Like a phantasma, or a hideous dream:
The genius and the mortal instruments

Are then in council; and the state of man,

Like to a little kingdom, suffers then

'The nature of an infurrection.'

Though the violence of his passion had made him eagerly embrace the first hint of this design, especially as it came from a relation of the lady, yet, when that friend to reslection, a pillow, had placed the action itself in all the natural black colours before his eyes, with all the consequences which must, and those which might probably attend it, his resolution began to abate, or rather, indeed, to go over to the other side: and after a long consist, which lasted a whole night, between honour and appetite, the former at length prevailed, and he determined to wait on Lady Bellaston, and to relinquish the design.

Lady Bellaston was in bed, though very late in the morning, and Sophia sitting by her bed side, when the servant acquainted her that Lord Fellamar was below in the parlour; upon which her ladyship desired him to stay, and that she would see him presently: but the fervant was no sooner departed, than poor Sophia began to entreat her cousin not to encourage the visits of that odious lord (so she called him, though a little unjustly) upon her account. I see his design, said she; for he made downright love to me yesterday morning; but as I am resolved never to admit it, I beg your ladyship not to leave us alone together any more; and to order the servants that, if he inquires for me, I may be always de-

nied to him.'

La! child, fays Lady Bellaston, you country girls have nothing but sweethearts in your heads; you fancy every man who is civil to you is making love. He is one of the most gallant young fellows about town, and

I am convinced means no more than a little gallantry. Make love to you, indeed! I wish with all my heart he would; and you must be an arrant mad woman to refuse him!

But as I shall certainly be that mad woman, cries Sophia, I hope his visits will not be intruded upon

me.

O, child! faid Lady Bellaston, you need not be so fearful; if you resolve to run away with that Jones, I

know no person who can hinder you.'

'Upon my honour, Madam, cries Sophia, your ladyship injures me. I will never run away with any man; nor will I ever marry contrary to my father's inclinations.'

'Well, Miss Western, said the lady, if you are not in a humour to see company this morning, you may retire to your own apartment; for I am not frightened at his lordship, and must send for him up into my dressing-room.'

Sophia thanked her ladyship, and withdrew; and prefently afterwards Fellamar was admitted up stairs.

CHAP. IV.

By which it will appear how dangerous an Advocate a lady is, when she applies her Eloquence to an ill Pur-

pose.

WHEN Lady Bellaston heard the young lord's scruples, she treated them with the same distain with which one of those sages of the law, called Newgate solicitors, treats the qualms of conscience in a young witness. 'My dear lord, said she, you certainly want a cordial. I must send to Lady Edgely for one of her best drams. Fie upon it! have more resolution. Are you frightened by the word rape? or are you apprehensive—Well! if the story of Helen was modern, I should think it unnatural: I mean, the behaviour of Paris, not the sondness of the lady; for all women love a man of spirit. There is another story of the Sabine ladies—and that too, I thank heaven, is very ancient. Your lordship, perhaps, will admire my reading; but I think Mr. Hook tells us, they made tolerable good wives as-

Ŕг

terwards. I fancy few of my married acquaintance were ravished by their husbands.'—' Nay, dear Lady Bellaston, cried he, don't ridicule me in this manner.'—' Why, my good lord, answered she, do you think any woman in England would not laugh at you in her heart, whatever prudery she might wear in her countenance? You force me to use a strange kind of language, and to betray my sex most abominably; but I am contented with knowing my intentions are good, and that I amendeavouring to serve my cousin; for I think you will make her a good husband notwithstanding this; or, upon my soul, I would not even persuade her to shing herself away upon an empty title. She should not upbraid me hereaster with having lost a man of spirit; for that his enemies allow this poor young fellow to be.'

Let those who have had the satisfaction of hearing reflections of this kind from a wife or a mistress, declare whether they are at all sweetened by coming from a semale tongue. Certain it is, they sunk deeper into his lordship than any thing which Demosthenes or Cicero

could have faid on the occasion.

Lady Bellaston, perceiving she had fired the young lord's pride, began now, like a true orator, to rouze other passions to its assistance. "My lord, says she, in a graver voice, you will be pleafed to remember, you mentioned this matter to me first; for I would not appear to you in the light of one who is endeavouring to put off my cousin upon you. Fourscore thousand pounds do not thand in need of an advocate to recommend them.'- Nor doth Miss Western, said he, require any recommendation from her fortune; for, in my opinion, no woman ever had half her charms.'- Yes, yes, my lord, replied the lady, looking in the glass, there have been women with more than half her charms, I affure you; not that I need lessen her on that account; fhe is a most delicious girl, that's certain; and within these few hours she will be in the arms of one who surely doth not deserve her; though I will give him his due; I believe he is truly a man of spirit.'

I hope so, Madam, said my lord; though I must

own he doth not deserve her; for, unless Heaven or your ladyship disappoint me, she shall within that time be in mine.'

Well spoken, my lord, answered the lady. I promise you no disappointment shall happen from my side; and within this week I am convinced I shall call your

lordflip my coufin in public.'

The remainder of this scene consisted entirely of raptures, excuses, and compliments, very pleasant to have heard from the parties, but rather dull when related at second hand. Here, therefore, we shall put an end to this dialogue, and hasten to the fatal hour, when every thing was prepared for the destruction of poor Sophia.

But this being the most tragical matter in our whole

history, we shall treat it in a chapter by itself.

CHAP. V.

Containing some matters which may affect, and others which may surprise, the Reader.

THE clock had now struck seven; and poor Sophia, alone and melancholy, sat reading a tragedy. It was The Fatal Marriage; and she was now come to that

part where the poor diffressed Isabella disposes of her

wedding-ring.

Here the book dropped from her hand, and a shower of tears ran down into her bosom. In this situation she had continued a minute, when the door opened, and in came Lord Fellamar. Sophia started from her chair at his entrance; and his lordship advancing forwards, and making a low bow, faid-' I am afraid, Miss Western, I break in upon you abrubtly.'- Indeed, my lord, fays the, I must own myself a little surprised at this unexpected visit.'- If this visit be unexpected, Madam, answered Lord Fellamar, my eyes must have been very faithless interpreters of my heart, when last I had the honour of feeing you: for furely you could not otherwise have hoped to detain my heart in your possession, without receiving a vifit from its owner.' Sophia, confused as she was, answered this bombast (and very properly I think) with a look of inconceivable difdain. My lord then made

another and a longer speech of the same fort. Upon which Sophia, trembling, faid, 'Am I really to conceive your lordship to be out of your senses? Sure, my lord, there is no other excuse for such behaviour.'- I am, indeed, Madam, in the fituation you suppose, cries his lordship; and sure you will pardon the effects of a phrenzy which you yourfelf have occasioned : for love hath so totally deprived me of reason, that I am scarce accountable for any of my actions.'- 'Upon my word, my lord, said Sophia, I neither understand your words nor your behaviour.'- Suffer me then, Madam, cries he, at your feet to explain both, by laying open my foul to you; and declaring that I doat on you to the higeft degree of distraction. O most adorable! most divine creature! what language can express the sentiments of my heart!'- 'I do affure you, my lord, faid Sophia, I shall not flay to hear any more of this.'- Do not, cries he, think of thus leaving me cruelly: could you know half the torments which I feel, that tender bosom must pity what those eyes have caused.' Then fetching a deep figh, and laying hold of her hand, he ran on for some minutes in a strain which would be little more pleasing to the reader than it was to the lady; and at last concluded with a declaration, that if he was master of the world, he would lay it at her feet. Sophia then forcibly pulling away her hand from his, answered with much spirit, 'I promise you, Sir, your world, and its master, I should spurn from me with equal contempt.' She then offered to go, and Lord Fellamar, again laying hold of her hand, faid, 'Pardon me, my beloved angel, freedoms which nothing but despair could have tempted me to take. Believe me, could I have had any hope that my title and fortune, neither of them inconsiderable, unless when compared with your worth, would have been accepted, I had in the humblest manner presented them to your acceptance. But I cannot lose you-by Heaven: I will sooner part with my soul. You are, you must, you shall be, only mine.'- My lord, said she, I entreat you to defift from a vain pursuit; for upon my honour I will never hear you on this subject. Let go my hand,

my lord: for I am resolved to go from you this moment; nor will I ever see you more?'—' Then, Madam, cries his lordship, I must make the best use of this moment; for I cannot, nor will not, live without you!'—'What do you mean, my lord? said Sophia; I will raise the family!' I have no fear, Madam, answered he, but of losing you; and that I am resolved to prevent, the only way which despair points to me.' He then caught her in his arms; upon which she screamed so loud, that she must have alarmed some one to her assistance, had not Lady Bellaston taken care to remove all ears.

But a more lucky circumstance happened for poor Sophia: another noise now broke forth, which almost drowned her cries; for now the whole house rung with, 'Where is she? D—n me, I'll unkennel her this instant I Shew me her chamber, I say: Where is my daughter? I know she's in the house, and I'll see her if she's above ground. Shew me where she is.' At which last words the door slew open, and in came Squire Western, with his parson, and a set of myrmidons at his

heels.

How miserable must have been the condition of poor Sophia, when the enraged voice of her father was welcome to her ears! Welcome, indeed, it was; and luckily did he come: for it was the only accident upon earth which could have preserved the peace of her mind from

being destroyed for ever.

Sophia, notwithstanding her fright, presently knew her father's voice; and his lordship, notwithstanding his passion, knew the voice of reason, which peremptorily assured him, it was not now a time for the perpetration of his villany. Hearing, therefore, the voice approach, and hearing likewise whose it was, (for as the squire more than once roared forth the word daughter, so Sophia, in the midst of her struggling, cried out upon her father;) he thought proper to relinquish his prey, having only disordered her handkerchief, and with his rude lips committed violence on her lovely neck.

If the reader's imagination doth not affift me, I shall never be able to describe the fituation of these two per-

fons when Western came into the room. Sophia tottered into a chair, where the fat disordered, pale, breathless, bursting with indignation at Lord Fellamar; affrighted, and yet more rejoiced, at the arrival of her father.

His lordship sat down near her, with the bag of his wig hanging over one of his shoulders, the rest of his dress being somewhat disordered, and rather a greater proportion of linen than is usual appearing at his bosom. As to the rest, he was amazed, affrighted, vexed, and ashamed.

As to Squire Western, he happened, at this time, to be overtaken by an enemy, which very frequently purfues, and feldom fails to overtake, most of the country gentlemen in this kingdom. He was, literally speaking, drunk; which circumstance, together with his natural impetuofity, could produce no other effect, than his running immediately up to his daughter, upon whom he fell foul with his tongue in the most inveterate manner: nay, he had probably committed violence with his hands, had not the parson interposed, saying, 'For heaven's fake, Sir, animadvert that you are in the house of a great lady. Let me beg you to mitigate your wrath; it should minister a fulness of satisfaction that you have found your daughter; for as to revenge, it belongeth not unto us. I discern great contrition in the countenance of the young lady. I stand affured, if you will forgive her, the will repent her of all past offences, and return unto her duty.'

The strength of the parson's arms had at first been of more service than the strength of his rhetoric. However, his last words wrought some effect; and the squire answered, 'I'll forgee her if she wull ha'un. If wot ha'un, Sophy, I'll forgee thee all. Why dost unt speak? Shat ha'un! D—n me, shat ha'un! Why dost unt an-

fwer? Was ever fuch a stubborn tuoad?"

'Let me entreat you, Sir, to be a little more moderate, said the parson; you frighten the young lady so, that you deprive her of all power of utterance.'

'Power of mine a-e! answered the squire. You

take her part then, do you? A pretty parson truly, to fide with an undutiful child. Yes, yes, I will gee you a living with a pox. I'll gee un to the devil tooner.'

'I humbly crave your pardon, faid the parfon: I af-

fure your worship I meant no such matter.

My Lady Bellaston now entered the room, and came up to the squire; who no sooner saw her, than resolving to follow the instructions of his sister, he made her a very civil bow, in the rural manner, and paid her some of his best compliments. He then immediately proceeded to his complaints, and said, 'There, my lady cousin! there stands the most undutiful child in the world: she hankers after a beggarly rascal, and won't marry one of the greatest matches in all England, that we have provided for her.'

'Indeed, Cousin Western, answered the lady, I am persuaded you wrong my cousin. I am sure she hath a better understanding. I am convinced she will not refuse what she must be sensible is so much to her ad-

vantage.'

This was a wilful mistake in Lady Bellaston; for she well knew whom Mr. Western meant; though, perhaps, she thought he would easily be reconciled to his lordship's

proposals.

'Do you hear there, quoth the fquire, what her ladythip fays? All your family are for the match. Come, Sophy, be a good girl, and be dutiful, and make your father happy.'

'If my death will make you happy, Sir, answered So-

phia, you will shortly be so

'It's a lye, Sophy; it's a d-n'd lye, and you know

it,' faid the fquire.

'Indeed, Miss Western, said Lady Bellaston, you injure your father: he hath nothing in view but your interest in this match; and I and all your friends must acknowledge the highest honour done to your family in the proposal.'

Aye, all of us, quoth the squire: nay, it was no proposal of mine. She knows it was her aunt proposed

it to me first. Come, Sophy, once more let me beg you to be a good girl, and gee me your consent before your cousin.'

Let me give him your hand, cousin, said the lady. It is the fashion, now-a-days, to dispense with time and

long courtships.'

Pugh, said the squire, what signifies time: won't they have time enough to court afterwards? People may court very well after they have been a-bed together.

As Lord Fellamar was very well affured, that he was meant by Lady Bellaston, so never having heard nor suspected a word of Bliss, he made no doubt of his being meant by the father. Coming up, therefore, to the squire, he said, 'Though I have not the honour, Sir, of being personally known to you; yet, as I find I have the happiness to have my proposals accepted, let me intercede, Sir, in behalf of the young lady, that she may not be more solicited at this time.'

'You intercede Sir! faid the squire: why, who the

devil are vou?'

'Sir, I am Lord Fellamar, answered he; and am the happy man, whom, I hope, you have done the honour of accepting for a son-in-law.'

'You are a son of a b-, replied the squire, for all your laced coat. You my son-in-law, and be d-n'd

to you!'

'I shall take more from you, Sir, than from any man, answered the lord; but I must inform you, that I am not used to hear such language without resentment.'

Resent my a—e, quoth the squire. Don't think I am asraid of such a sellow as thee art, because hast got a spit there dangling at thy side. Lay by your spit, and I'll give thee enough of meddling with what doth not belong to thee. I'll teach you to father-in-law me! I'll lick thy jacket!'

'It's very well, Sir, said my lord; I shall make no disturbance before the ladies, I am very well satisfied.

Your humble servant, Sir. Lady Bellaston, your most

His Lordship was no sooner gone, than Lady Bellaston, coming up to Mr. Western, said, 'Bless me, Sir! what have you done? you know not whom you have affronted; he is a nobleman of the first rank and fortune; and yesterday made proposals to you daughter; and such as I am sure you must accept with the highest pleafure.'

Answer for yourself, lady cousin, said the squire. I will have nothing to do with any of your lords. My daughter shall have an honest country gentleman; I have pitched upon one for her, and she shall ha'un. I am sorry for the trouble she hath given your ladyship, with all my heart.' Lady Bellaston made a civil speech upon the word trouble; to which the squire answered, 'Why, that's kind! and I would do as much for your ladyship. To be sure, relations should do for one another. So I wish your ladyship a good night. Come, Madam, you must go along with me by fair means, or I'll have you carried down to the coach.'

Sophia said she would attend him without force; but begged to go in a chair, for she said she should not be

able to ride any other way.

Pry'thee, cries the squire, wont unt persuade me canst not ride in a coach, wouldst? that's a pretty thing, surely! No, no, I'll never let thee out of my sight any more, till art married, that I promise thee.' Sophia told him she saw he was resolved to break her heart. O break thy heart, and be d—n'd, quoth he, if a good husband will break it. I don't value a brass varden, not a hapenny of an undutiful b—upon earth.' He then took violently hold of her hand! upon which the parson once more interfered, begging him to use gentle methods. At that the squire thundered out a curse, and bid the parson hold his tongue, saying, 'At'n't in pulpit now. When art a got up there, I never mind what dost say; but I won't be priest-ridden, nor taught how to behave myself by thee—I wish your ladyship a

good night—Come along Sophy; he a good girl, and all shall be well. Shat ha'un; d—n me, shat ha'un.'

Mrs. Honour appeared below stairs, and with a low curtley to the squire, offered to attend her mistres; but he pushed her away, saying, 'Hold, Madam, hold: you come no more near my house. '- And will you take my maid away from me?' faid Sophia .- 'Yes, indeed, Madam, will I, cries the squire: you need not fear being without a servant; I will get you another maid, and a better maid than this, who, I'd-lay five pounds to a crown, is no more a maid than my grannum. No, no, Sophy; she shall contrive no more escapes, I promife you.' He then packed up his daughter and the parson into a hackney coach, after which he mounted himself, and ordered it to drive to his lodgings. In the way thither he suffered Sophia to be quiet, and entertained himself with reading a lecture to the parson on good manners, and a proper behaviour to his betters.

It is possible he might not so easily have carried off his daughter from Lady Bellaston, had that good lady desired to have detained her; but, in reality, she was not a little pleased with the confinement into which Sophia was going; and as her project with Lord Fellamar had failed of success, she was well contented that other violent methods were now going to be used in favour of

another man.

CHAP. VI.

THOUGH the reader in many histories is obliged to digest much more unaccountable appearances than this of Mr. Western, without any satisfaction at all, yet, as we dearly love to oblige him whenever it is in our power, we shall now proceed to shew by what method the squire discovered where his daughter was.

In the third chapter, then, of the preceding book, we gave a hint (for it is not our custom to unfold at any time more than is necessary for the occasion) that Mrs. Fitzpatrick, who was very desirous of reconciling herself to her uncle and aunt Western, thought she had a probable opportunity, by the service of preserving Sophia from

committing the same crime which had drawn on herself the anger of her family. After much deliberation, therefore, she resolved to inform her aunt Western where her cousin was, and accordingly she wrote the following letter, which we shall give the reader at length, for more reasons than one.

Honoured Madam.

The occasion of my writing this will, perhaps, make a letter of mine agreeable to my aear aunt, for the sake of one of her nieces; though I have little reason to hope it will be so on the account of another.

Without more apology, as I was coming to throw my unhapty self at your feet, I met, by the strangest accident in the world, my cousin Soppy, whose history you are better acquainted with than myself; though, alas! I know insinitely too much; enough, indeed, to satisfy me, that, unless she is immediately prevented, she is in danger of running into the same fatal miscoief, which, by sooliphy and ignorantly refusing your most wise and prudent advice, I have unfortunately brought on myself.

In short, I have seen the man; nay, I was nost part of yesterday in his company, and a charming young fellow I promise you be is. By what accident be came acquainted with me, is too teaious to tell you now; but I have this morning changed my lodgings to awoid him, lest be should by my means discover my cousin; for be doth not yet know where she is, and it is adviseable he should not, until my uncle bath secured her. No time therefore is to be lost; and I need only inform you, that she is now with Lady Bellaston, whom I have seen, and whoo bath, I find, a design of conceasing her from her family. You know, Madam, she is a strange woman; but nothing could misbecome me more, than to presume to give any bint to one of your great understanding, and great knowledge of the world, besides barely informing you of the matter of fact.

I bope, Madam, the care which I have shown on this occasion for the good of my family, will recommend me again to the favour of a lady who hath always exerted so much zeal for the honour and true interest of us all; and that it may be a means of restoring me to your friendship, which hath made so great a part of my former, and is so necessary to my future happiness. I am, with the utmost restect, bonoured Madam, your most dutiful, obliged niece, and most obedient

bumble ferwant,

· Harriet Fitzpatrick.'

Mrs. Western was now at her brother's house, where she had resided ever since the slight of Sophia, in order to administer comfort to the poor squire in his affliction. Of this comfort, which she doled out to him in daily portions, we have formerly given a specimen.

She was now standing with her back to the fire; and, Vol. III.

with a pinch of fnuff in her hand, was dealing forth this daily allowance of comfort to the squire, while he smoaked his afternoon pipe, when she received the above letter, which she had no sooner read, than she delivered it to him, saying—'There, Sir, there is an account of your lost sheep. Fortune hath again restored her to you; and if you will be governed by my advice, it is possible you

may yet preserve her.'

The squire had no sooner read the letter, than he leaped from his chair, threw his pipe into the fire, and gave a loud huzza for joy. He then summoned his servants, called for his boots, and ordered the chevalier and several other horses to be saddled, and that Parson Supple should be immediately sent for. Having done this, he turned to his sister, caught her in his arms, and gave her a close embrace, saying, 'Zounds! you don't seem pleased; one would imagine you was forry I have found the girl!'

Brother, answered she, the deepest politicians, who see to the bottom, discover often a very different aspect of affairs from what swims on the surface. It is true, indeed, things do look rather less desperate than they did formerly in Holland, when Lewis the Fourteenth was at the gates of Amsterdam; but there is a delicacy required in this matter, which you will pardon me, brother, if I suspect you want. There is a decorum to be used with a woman of figure, such as Lady Bellaston, brother, which requires a knowledge of the world superior, I am afraid, to yours.

Sifter, cries the squire, I know you have no opinion of my parts; but I'll shew you on this occasion who is a fool. Knowledge, quoth'a; I have not been in the country so long, without having some knowledge of warrants, and the law of the land. I know I may take my own wherever I can find it. Shew me my own daughter, and if I don't know how to come at her, I'll suffer you to call me a fool as long as I live. There be justices of peace in London, as well as in other places."

'I protest, cries she, you make me tremble for the event of this matter! which, if you will proceed by my

advice, you may bring to so good an issue. Do you really imagine, brother, that the house of a woman of figure is to be attacked by warrants and brutal justices of the peace? I will inform you how to proceed. As soon as you arrive in town, and have got yourself into a decent dress, (for indeed, brother, you have none at present fit to appear in) you must send your compliments to Lady Bellaston, and defire leave to wait on her. When you are admitted to her presence, as you certainly will be, and have told her your story, and have made proper use of my name, (for I think you only just know one another by sight, though you are relations) I am consident she will withdraw her protection from my niece, who hath certainly imposed upon her. This is the only method—justices of peace, indeed! do you imagine any such event can arrive to a woman of sigure in a civilized nation?

Don their figures, cries the squire: a pretty civilized nation, truly, where women are above the law. And what, must I stand sending a parcel of compliments to a confounded whore, that keeps away my daughter from her own natural father? I tell you, fister, I am not so ignorant as you think me. I know you would have women above the law: but it is all a lie: I heard his lordship say at a size, that no one is above the law. But this of yours is Hanover law, I suppose.

'Mr. Western, said she, I think you daily improve in ignorance. I protest you are grown an arrant bear.'

'No more a bear than yourself, sister Western, said the squire. Pox! you may talk of your civility an you will; I am sure you never shew any to me. I am no bear; no, nor dog neither; though I know somebody that begins with a b—; but, pox! I will shew you I have a got more good manners than some volks.'

'Mr. Western, answered the lady, you may say what you please. Jevous mes prise de tout mon cœur. I shall not, therefore, be angry. Besides, as my cousin with that odious Irish name justly says, I have that regard for the honour and true interest of my samily, and that concern for my niece, who is a part of it, that I

L 2

have resolved to go to town myself upon this occasion; for, indeed, indeed, brother, you are not a fit minister to be employed at a polite court. Greenland! Greenland! should always be the scene of the tramontane negotiation.'

' I thank heaven, cries the squire, I don't understand you now. You are got to your Hanoverian linguo. However, I'll shew you I scorn to be behind hand in civility with you; and as you are not angry for what I have faid, so I am not angry for what you have faid. Indeed, I have always thought it a folly for relations to quarrel; and if they do now and then give a hafty word, why people should give and take: for my part I never bear malice; and I take it very kind of you to go up to London; for I never was there but twice in my life, and then I did not fray above a fortnight at a time; and to be fure, I can't be expected to know much of the streets and the volks in that time: I never denied that you know'd all these matters better than I. For me to dispute that would be all as one, as for you to dispute the management of a pack of dogs, or the finding a hare fitting, with me'- Which I promise you, says she, I never will.'- Well, and I promise you, returned he, that I never will dispute t'other,'

Here then a league was struck (to borrow a phrase from the lady) between the contending parties; and now the parson arriving, and the horses being ready, the squire departed, having promised his sister to follow her advice, and she prepared to follow him the next day.

But having communicated these matters to the parson on the road, they both agreed that the prescribed formalities might very well be dispensed with; and the squire having changed his mind, proceeded in the manner we have already seen.

CHAP. VII.

A FFAIRS were in the aforefaid fituation, when Mrs. Honour arrived at Mrs. Miller's, and called Jones out from the company, as we have before feen;

with whom, when the found herfelf alone, the began as follows:—

O, my dear Sir, how shall I get spirits to tell you! You are undone, Sir! and my poor lady's undone, and I am undone.'- Hath any thing happened to Sophia?' cries Jones, staring like a madman. 'All that is bad, cries Honour. O, I shall never get such another lady! O that I should ever live to see this day! At these words, Jones turned pale as afhes, trembled and flammered; but Honour went on: O, Mr. Jones, I have loft my lady for ever!'- 'How! what! for Heaven's fake tell me. O my dear Sophia!'- You may well call her fo, faid Honour; she was the dearest lady to me-I shall never have fuch another place.'- D-n your place, cries Jones: Where is-What! what is become of my Sophia?'- Aye, to be fure, cries she, servants may be It fignifies nothing what becomes of them, though they are furned away and ruined ever fo much. To be fure, they are not flesh and blood like other people. No, to be fure, it fignifies nothing what becomes of them.'- If you have any pity, any compassion, cries Jones, I beg you will instantly tell me what hath happened to Sophia.'- 'To be fure, I have more pity for you than you have for me, answered Honour. don't d-n you because you have lost the sweetest lady in the world. To be fure, you are worthy to be pitied, and I'm worthy to be pitied too: for to be fure, if ever there was a good miffrels- What hath happened? cries Jones, in almost a raving fit .- " What? what? faid Honour; why, the worst that could have happened, both for you and for me. Her father is come to town, and hath carried her away from us both.'-Here Jones fell on his knees in thanksgiving that it was no worse. No worse! repeated Honour. What could be worse for either of us? He carried her off, swearing she should marry Mr. Blifil: that's for your comfort; and for poor me, I am turned out of doors.'- Indeed, Mrs. Honour, answered Jones, you frightened me out of my wits. I imagined some most dreadful sudden accident had happened to Sophia; formething compared to which, even

L3

the feeing her married to Blifil would be a trifle; but while there is life there are hopes, my dear Honour. Women in this land of liberty cannot be married by actual brutal force."- To be fure, Sir, faid the, that's true. There may be some hopes for you; but alack-aday! what hopes are there for poor me? And to be fure. Sir, you must be sensible I suffer all this upon your account. All the quarrel the fquire hath to me, is for taking your part, as I have done, against Mr. Blifil.'-Indeed Mrs. Honour, answered he, I am sensible of my obligations to you, and will leave nothing in my power undone to make you amends.'- 'Alas! Sir, faid the, what can make a fervant amends for the lofs of one place, but the getting another altogether as good?'-Do not despair, Mrs. Honour, said Jones; I hope to reinstate you again in the same.'- Alack-a-day, Sir. faid she, how can I flatter myself with such hopes, when I know it is a thing impossible; for the squire is so set against me: and yet, if you should ever have my lady, as to be fure, I hopes heartily you will; for you are a generous good-natured gentleman, and I am fure you loves her, and to be fure she loves you as dearly as her own foul; it is a matter in vain to deny it; because as why, every body that is in the least acquainted with my lady must see it; for poor dear lady, she can't dissemble; and if two people who loves one another a'n't happy, who should be to? Happiness don't always depend upon what people has; besides, my lady has enough for both. To be fure, therefore, as one may fay, it would be all the pity in the world to keep two fuch lovers afunder: nay, I am convinced, for my part, you will meet together at last; for if it is to be, there is no preventing it. If a marriage is made in heaven, all the justices of peace upon earth can't break it off. To be fure, I wishes that Parson Supple had but a little more spirit, to tell the fquire of his wickedness, in endeavouring to force his daughter contrary to her liking; but then his whole dependance is on the squire, and so the poor gentleman, though he is a very religious good fort of a man, and talks of the badness of such doings behind the squire's

back, yet he dares not fay his foul is his own to his face. To be fure, I never faw him make so bold as just now; I was afeard the foure would have ftruck him. I would not have your honour be melancholy. Sir, nor despair: things may go better, as long as you are fure of my lady, and that I am certain you may be; for the never will be brought to consent to marry any other man. Indeed, I am terribly afeard the squire will do her a mischief in his passion; for he is a prodigious passionate gentleman; and I am afeard too, the poor lady will be brought to break her heart; for the is as tender-hearted as a chicken: it is pity, methinks, she had not a little of my courage. If I was in love with a young man, and my father offered to lock me up, I'd tear his eyes out, but I'd come at him: but then there's a great fortune in the case, which it is in her father's power either to give her or not: that, to be fure, may make some difference."

Whether Jones gave strict attention to all the foregoing harangue, or whether it was for want of any vacancy in the discourse, I cannot determine; but he never once attempted to answer, nor did she once stop, till Partridge came running into the room, and informed

him, that the great lady was upon the stairs.

Nothing could equal the dilemma to which Jones was now reduced. Honour knew nothing of any acquaint-ance that subsisted between him and Lady Bellaston; and she was almost the last person in the world to whom he would have communicated it. In this hurry and distress, he took (as is common enough) the worst course; and, instead of exposing her to the lady, which would have been of little consquence, he choic to expose the lady to her; he therefore resolved to hide Honour, whom he had but just time to convey behind the bed, and to draw the curtains.

The hurry in which Jones had been all day engaged on account of his poor landlady and her family, the terrors occasioned by Mrs. Honour, and the confusion into which he was thrown by the sudden arrival of Lady Bellaston, had altogether driven former thoughts out of his head; so that it never once occurred to his memory to

act the part of a fick man; which, indeed, neither the gaiety of his dress, nor the freshness of his countenance

would have at all supported.

He received her ladyship, therefore, rather agreeably to her defires, than to her expectations, with all the good humour he could muster in his countenance, and without any real or affected appearance of the least diforder.

Lady Bellaston no sooner entered the room, than she squatted herself down on the bed. So my dear Jones, said she, you find nothing can detain me long from you. Perhaps I ought to be angry with you, that I have neither seen nor heard from you all day; for I perceive your distemper would have permitted you to go abroad: nay, I suppose you have not sat in your chamber all day, dressed up like a fine lady, to see company after a lying-in: but, however, don't think I intend to scold you; for I never will give you an excuse for the cold behaviour of a husband, by putting on the ill-humour of a wife.'

'Nay, Lady Bellaston, said Jones, I am sure your ladyship will not upbraid me with neglect of duty, when I only waited for orders. Who, my dear creature, hath reason to complain? Who missed an appointment last night, and left an unhappy man to expect, and wish,

and figh and languish?"

Do not mention it, my dear Jones, cried she. If you knew the occasion, you would pity me. In short, it is impossible to conceive what women of condition are obliged to suffer from the impertinence of fools, in order to keep up the farce of the world. I am glad, however, all your languishing and wishing have done you no harm, for you never looked better in your life. Upon my faith, Jones, you might at this instant sit for the picture of Adonis.'

There are certain words of provocation, which men of honour hold can only properly be answered by a blow. Among lovers, possibly, there may be some expressions which can only be answered by a kiss. The compliment which Lady Bellaston now made Jones seems to be

of this kind; especially as it was attended with a look, in which the lady conveyed more soft ideas than it was

possible to express with her tongue.

Jones was certainly at this instant in one of the most disagreeable and distressed situations imaginable; for, to carry on the comparison we made use of before, though the provocation was given by the lady, Jones could not receive satisfaction, nor so much as offer to ask it, in the presence of a third person; seconds in this kind of duels not being according to the law of arms. As this objection did not occur to Lady Bellafton, who was ignorant of any other woman being there but herfelf, she waited some time in great astonishment for an answer from Jones; who, conscious of the ridiculous figure he made, stood at a distance, and not daring to give the proper answer, gave none at all. Nothing can be imagined more comic, nor yet more tragic, than this scene would have been, if it had lasted much longer. The lady had already changed colour two or three times, and got up from the bed, and far down again; while Jones was wishing the ground to fink under him, or the house to fall on his head; when an odd accident freed him from the embarrassinent, out of which neither the eloquence of a Cicero, nor the politics of a Machiavel, could have delivered him, without utter difgrace.

This was no other than the arrival of young Nightingale, dead drunk; or rather in that state of drunkenness, which deprives men of the use of their reason, without de-

priving them of the use of their limbs.

Mrs. Miller and her daughters were in bed, and Partridge was smoaking his pipe by the kitchen fire; so that he arrived at Mr. Jones's chamber-door without any interruption. This he burst open, and was entering without any ceremony, when Jones started from his seat, and ran to oppose him; which he did so effectually, that Nightingale never came far enough within the door to see who was sitting on the bed.

Nightingale had, in reality, mistaken Jones's apartment for that in which himself had lodged; he therefore strongly insisted on coming in, often swearing that he would not be kept from his own bed. Jones, however, prevailed over him, and delivered him into the hands of Partridge, whom the noise on the stairs soon summoned to his master's affistance.

And now Jones was unwillingly obliged to return to his own apartment; where, at the very inftant of his entrance, he heard Lady Bellaston venting an exclamation, though not a very loud one; and, at the same time, saw her slinging herself into a chair in a vast agitation, which, in a lady of a tender constitution, would have been an hysteric sit.

In reality, the lady, frightened with the struggle between the two men, of which she did not know what would be the issue, as she heard Nightingale swear many oaths he would come to his own bed, attempted to retire to her known place of hiding, which, to her great

confusion, she found already occupied by another.

'Is this usage to be borne, Mr. Jones! cries the lady. Buselt of men! What wretch is this to whom you have exposed me?'—'Wretch! cries Honour, bursting in a violent rage from her place of concealment—Marry come up! Wretch, forsooth! as poor a wretch as I am, I am honest; that is more than some folks who are

richer can fay.'

Jones, instead of applying himself directly to take off the edge of Mrs. Honour's resentment, as a more experienced gallant would have done, fell to cursing his stars, and lamenting himself as the most unfortunate man in the world; and presently after, addressing himself to Lady Bellasson, he fell to some very absurd protestations of innocence. By this time, the lady having recovered the use of her reason, which she had as ready as any woman in the world, especially on such occasions, calmly replied, Sir, you need make no apologies: I see now who the person is: I did not at first know Mrs. Honour; but now I do, I can suspect nothing wrong between her and you; and I am sure she is a woman of too good sense to put any wrong construction upon my visit to you: I have

been always her friend, and it may be in my power to

be much more so hereafter.'

Mrs. Honour was altogether as placable as the was. passionate. Hearing, therefore, Lady Bellaston assume the loft tone, the likewise softened her's. 'I am lure, Madam, fays she, I have been always ready to acknowledge your ladyship's friendships to me: sure I never had so good a friend as your ladyship; and, to be fure, now I fee it is your ladyship that I spoke to, I could almost bite my tongue off for very madnels. I constructions upon your ladythip! To be fure, it doth not become a servant, as I am, to think about such a great, great lady-I mean, I was a fervant: for, indeed, I am nobody's fervant now, the more miserable wretch is me. I have loft the best mistress-' Here Honour thought fit to produce a shower of tears. Don't cry, child, says the good lady: ways, perhaps, may be found to make you amends. Come to me to-morrow morning. Sae then took up her fan, which lay on the ground, and, without even looking at Jones, walked very majestically out of the room; there being a kind of dignity in the impudence of women of quality, which their inferiors vainly aspire to attain to in circumstances of this nature.

Jones followed her down stairs, often offering her his hand, which she absolutely refused him, and got into her chair without taking any notice of him as he stood

bowing before her.

At is return up stairs, a long dialogue passed between him and Mrs. Honour, while the was adjusting herself after the discomposure she had undergone. The subject of this was, his insidelity to her young lady; on which she enlarged with great bitterness: but Jones at last found means to reconclide her; and not only so, but to obtain a promise of most inviolable secresy, and that she would the next morning endeavour to find out Sophia, and bring him a farther account of the proceedings of the squire.

Thus ended this unfortunate adventure, to the satisfaction of Mrs. Honour; for a secret (as some of my readers will, perhaps, acknowledge from experience) is

often a very valuable possession; and that not only to those who faithfully keep it, but sometimes to such as whisper it about, till it come to the ears of every one, except the ignorant person, who pays for the supposed concealing of what is publicly known.

CHAP. VIII.

NOTWITHSTANDING all the obligations she had received from Jones, Mrs. Miller could not forbear in the morning some gentle remonstrances for the hurricane which had happened the preceding night in his chamber. These were however so gentle and so friendly; professing, and indeed truly, to aim at nothing more than the real good of Mr. Jones himself; that he, far from being offended, thankfully received the admonition of the good woman, expressed much concern for what had passed, excused it as well as he could, and promised never more to bring the same disturbances into the house.

But though Mrs. Miller did not refain from a short expostulation in private at their first meeting, yet the occasion of his being summoned down stairs that morning was of a much more agreeable kind; being, indeed, to perform the office of a father to Miss Nancy, and to give her in wedlock to Mr. Nightingale; who was now ready dressed, and full as sober as many of my readers will think a man ought to be, who receives a wife in so

imprudent a manner.

And here, perhaps, it may be proper to account for the escape which this young gentleman had made from his uncle, and for his appearance in the condition in which

we have feen him the night before.

Now, when the uncle had arrived at his lodgings with his nephew, partly to indulge his own inclinations, (for he dearly loved his bottle,) and partly to disqualify his nephew, from the immediate execution of his purpose, he ordered wine to be set on the table; with which he so briskly ply'd the young gentleman, that this latter, who, though not much used to drinking, did not detest it so as to be guilty of disobedience, or of want

of complaifance, by refuting, was foon compleatly fi-

Just as the uncle had obtained this victory, and was preparing a bed for his nephew, a messenger arrived with a piece of news which so entirely disconcerted and shocked him, that he in a moment lost all consideration for his nephew, and his whole mind became entirely

taken up with his own concerns.

This sudden and afflicting news was no less, than that his daughter had taken the opportunity of almost the first moment of his absence, and had gone off with a neighbouring young clergyman; against whom, though her father could have had but one objection, namely, that he was worth nothing, yet she had never thought proper to communicate her amour even to that father; and so artfully had she managed, that it had never been once suspected by any, till now that it was consummated.

Old Mr. Nightingale no sooner received this account, than, in the utmost confusion, he ordered a post chaise to be instantly got ready; and having recommended his nephew to the care of a servant, he directly left the house, scarce knowing what he did, nor whither he went.

The uncle being thus departed, when the fervant came to attend the nephew to bed, had waked him for that purpose, and had at last made him sensible that his uncle was gone; he, instead of accepting the kind offices tendered him, insisted on a chair being called; with this, the servant, who had received no strict orders to the centrary, readily complied; and thus being conducted back to the house of Mrs. Miller, he had staggered up to Mr. Jones's chamber, as hath been before recounted.

This bar of the uncle being now removed, (though young Nightingale knew not as yet in what manner,) and all parties being quickly ready, the mother, Mr. Jones, Mr. Nightingale, and his love, stepped into a hackney-coach, which conveyed them to Doctors Com-

Vol. III M

mons; where Mils Nancy was, in vulgar language, foon made an honest woman; and the poor mother became in the purest sense of the word, one of the hap-

pieft of all human beings.

And now Mr. Jones, having feen his good offices to that poor woman and her family brought to a happy conclusion, began to apply himself to his own concerns: but here, lest many of my readers should censure his folly for thus troubling himself with the affairs of others, and lest some few should think he acted more disinterestedly than indeed he did, we think proper to assure our readers, that he was so far from being unconcerned in this matter, that he had indeed a very considerable interest in bringing it to that final consummation.

To explain this seeming paradox at once, he was one who could truly say with him in Terence, Homo sum: nihil bumani a me alienum puto. He was never an indifferent spectator of the misery or happiness of any one; and he selt either the one or the other in greater proportion as he himself contributed to either. He could not, therefore, be the instrument of raising a whole family from the lowest state of wretchedness to the highest pitch of joy, without conveying great felicity to himself; more, perhaps, than worldly men often purchase to themselves by undergoing the most severe labour, and often by wading through the deepest iniquity.

Those readers who are of the same complexion with him, will, perhaps, think this short chapter contains abundance of matter; while others may, probably, wish, short as it is, that it had been totally spared, as impertinent to the main design; which, I suppose, they conclude, is to bring Mr. Jones to the gallows; or, if pos-

fible, to a more deplorable catastrophe.

CHAP. IX.

Centaining Love Letters of several Sorts.

MR. Jones, at his return home, found the following letters laying on his table, which he luckily opened in the order they were tent.

LETTER I.

Surely I am under some strange infatuation; I cannot keep my refolutions a moment, bowever strongly made or justly founded. Last right I resolved never to see you more; this morning I am willing to bear if you can, as you say, clear up this affair; and yet I know that to be impossible. I have said every thing to myself which you can invent—Perhaps not. Perhaps your invention is stronger. Come to me therefore the moment you receive this. If you can forge an excuse, I almost promise you to believe it. Betrayed to——I will think no more. Come to me directly. This is the third letter I have writ; the two former are burnt—I am almost inclined to burn this too. I wish I may preserve my senses. Come to me presently.

LETTER II.

'If you ever expect to be forgiven, or even suffered within my doors, come to me this instant.'

LETTER III.

I now find you was not at home when my notes came to your lodgings. The moment you receive this, let me see you: I shall not stir out; nor shall any body be let in but yourself. Sure nothing can detain you long!

Jones had just read over these three billets, when Mr. Nightingale came into the room. 'Well, Tom, faid he, any news from Lady Bellaston, after last night's adventure?' (for it was now no fecret to any one in that house who the lady was.) 'The Lady Bellaston!' answered Jones very gravely .- ' Nay, dear Tom, cries Nightingale, don't be so reserved to your friends. Though I was too drunk to see her last night, I saw her at the masquerade. Do you think I am ignorant who the queen of the fairies is?'- 'And did you really then know the lady at the masquerade?' said Jones .- 'Yes, upon my foul, did I, said Nightingale; and have given you twenty hints of it fince; though you feemed always to tender on that point, that I would not speak plainly, I fancy, my friend, by your extreme nicety in this matter, you are not so well acquainted with the character of the lady as with her person. Don't be angry, Tom; but, upon my honour, you are not the first young fellow the hath debauched. Her reputation is in no dan-M 2 ger, believe me."

Though Jones had no reason to imagine the lady to have been of the vestal kind, when his amour began, yet, as he was thoroughly ignorant of the town, and had very little acquaintance in it, he had yet no knowledge of that character which is vulgarly called a demirep; that is to say, a woman who intrigues with every man she likes, under the name and appearance of virtue; and who, though some over-nice ladies will not be seen with her, is visited (as they term it) by the whole town; in short, whom every one knows to be what nobody calls her.

When he found, therefore, that Nightingale was perfectly acquainted with his intrigue, and began to sufpect that so scrupulous a delicacy, as he had hitherto observed, was not quite necessary on the occasion, he gave a latitude to his friend's tongue, and desired him to speak plainly what he knew, or had ever heard, of the

lady.

Nightingale, who, in many other instances, was rather too efferninate in his disposition, had a pretty strong inclination to tittle tattle. He had no sooner, therefore, received a full liberty of speaking from Jones, than he entered upon a long narrative concerning the lady; which, as it contained many particulars highly to her dishonour, we have too great a tenderness for all women of condition to repeat. We would cautiously avoid giving an opportunity to suture commentators on our works, of making any malicious application; and of forcing us to be, against our will, the author of scandal, which never entered into our head.

Jones having very attentively heard all that Nightingale had to fay, fetched a deep figh, which the other observing, cried, 'Heyday! why thou art not in love, I hope! Had I imagined my stories would have affected you, I promise you should never have heard them.'— 'O, my dear friend, cries Jones, I am so entangled with this woman, that I know not how to extricate myself.— 'In love, indeed!—No, my friend, but I am under obligations to her, and very great ones. Since you know

fo much, I will be very explicit with you. It is owing, perhaps, folely to her, that I have not before this wanted a bit of bread. How can I peffibly defert such a woman? and yet I must desert her, or be guilty of the blackest treachery to one who deserves infinitely better of me than she can: a woman, my Nightingale, for whom I have a passion which few can have an idea of ! I am half distracted with doubts how to act!'- 'And is this other, pray, an honourable mistress?' cries Nightingale.— Honourable! answered Jones; no breath yet: ever durst fully her reputation. The sweetest air is not purer, the limpid stream not clearer, than her honour : fhe is all over, both in mind and body, confummate perfection. She is the most beautiful creature in the universe; and yet she is mistress of such noble, elevated qualities, that though she is never from my thoughts, I scarce ever think of her beauty but when I see it.'-'And can you, my good friend, cries Nightingale, with fuch an engagement as this upon your hands, hefitate a moment about quitting fuch a---?'- 'Hold, faid Jones, no more abuse of her; I detest the thoughts of ingratitude.'- 'Pooh! answered the other, you are not the first upon whom she hath conferred obligations of this kind. She is remarkably liberal where the likes; though, let me tell you, her favours are fo prudently beflowed, that they should rather raise a man's vanity than his gratitude.'

In short, Nightingale proceeded so far on this head, and told his friend so many stories of the lady, which he swore to the truth of, that he entirely removed all esteem for her from the breast of Jones; and his gratitude was lessened in proportion. Indeed, he began to look on all the favours he had received rather as wages than benefits; which not only depreciated her, but himself too, in his own conceit, and put him quite out of humour with both. From this disgust, his mind, by a natural transition, turned towards Sophia: her virtue, her purity, her love to him, her sufferings on this account, filled

all his thoughts, and made his commerce with Lady

Bellaston appear still more odious.

The result of all was, that though his turning himself out of her fervice, in which light he now saw his affair with her, would be the loss of his bread, yet he determined to quit her, if he could but find a handsome pretence; which, having communicated to his friend, Nightingale considered a little, and then said—' I have it, my boy; I have found out a sure method: propose marriage to her, and I would venture hanging upon the success.'—' Marriage!' cries Jones.—' Aye, propose marriage, answered Nightingale, and she will declare off in a moment. I knew a young fellow whom she kept formerly, who made the offer to her in earnest, and was presently turned off for his pains.'

Iones declared he could not venture the experiment, Perhaps, faid he, she may be less shocked at this proposal from one man than from another. And if she should take me at my word, where am I then? Caught in my own trap, and undone for ever.'- 'No, answered Nightingale, not if I can give you an expedient, by which you may, at any time, get out of the trap.'-What expedient can that be? replied Jones.'- This, answered Nightingale. The young fellow I mentioned, who is one of the most intimate acquaintance I have in the world, is so angry with her for some ill offices she hath fince done him, that I am fure he would, without any difficulty, give you a fight of her letters; upon which you may decently break with her, and declare off before the knot is tied, if the thould really be willing to tie it, which I am convinced the will not.

After some hesitation, Jones, upon the strength of this assurance, consented; but as he swore he wanted the considence to propose the matter to her face, he wrote the following letter, which Nightingale distated—

· Madam,

abroad, I should have missed receiving the bonour of your ladyship's commands, the moment they came; and the delay which I must now

suffer of vindicating myself to your ladyship greatly adds to this miffortune. O, Lady Bellaston, what a terror have I been in, for fear
your reputation should be exposed by these perverse accidents! There
is one only way to secure it. I need not name what it is. Only permit me to say, that as your honour is as dear to me as my own, so my
sole ambition is to have the glory of laying my liberty at your feet; and
believe me, when I assure you, I can never be made completely happy,
without you generously bestow on me a legal right of calling you mine for
ever. I am, Madam, with most profound respect, your ladyship's
most obliged, obedient humble servant,

To this the presently returned the following answer—

When I read over your serious epistle, I could, from its coldness and formality, have sworn that you had already the legal right you mention; nay, that we had, for many years, composed that monstrous animal, a husband and wife. Do you really then imagine me a fool? or do you fancy yourself capable of so entirely persuading me out of my senses, that I should deliver my whole fortune into your power, in order to enable you to support your pleasures at my expense? Are these the proofs of love which I expected? Is this the return for—but I scorn to upbraid you, and am in great admiration of your prosound respect.

P.S. I am prevented from revising : ___perhaps I bave faid

more than I meant. Come to me at eight this evening.

Jones, by the advice of his privy-council, replied,

· Madam,

It is impossible to express bow much I am shocked at the susticion you entertain of me. Can Lady Bellaston have conferred savours on a man whom she could believe capable of so hase a design? or can she treat the most solemn it of love with contempt? Can you imagine, Madam, that if the violence of my passion, in an unguarded moment, evercame the tenderness which I have for your honour, that I would think of indulging myself in the continuance of an intercourse which could not possibly escape long the notice of the world; and which, when discovered, must prove so satal to your reputation? If such be your opinion of me, I must pray for a sudden opportunity of returning those pecuniary obligations which I have been so unfortunate to receive at your hands; and for those of a more tender kind, I shall ever remain, Sc.

And so concluded in the very words with which he

had concluded the former letter.

The lady answered as follows:

'I see you are a villain; and I despise you from my soul. If you come bere I shall not be at bome.'

Though Jones was well fatisfied with his deliverance from a thraldom which those who have ever experienced will, I apprehend, allow to be none of the lightest, he was not, however, perfectly easy in his mind. There was, in this scheme, too much of fallacy to satisfy one who utterly detested every species of falshood or dishonesty: nor would he, indeed, have submitted to put it in practice, had he not been involved in a distressful situation, where he was obliged to be guilty of some dishonour, either to the one lady or the other; and surely the reader will allow, that every good principle, as well as love, pleaded strongly in favour of Sophia.

Nightingale highly exulted in the success of his stratagem, upon which he received many thanks, and much applause, from his friend. He answered, Dear Tom, we have conferred very different obligations on each other. To me you owe the regaining your liberty; to you I owe the loss of mine. But if you are as happy in the one instance as I am in the other, I promise you,

we are the two happiest fellows in England.'

The two gentlemen were now summoned down to dinner, where Mrs. Miller, who performed herself the office of cook, had exerted her best talents to celebrate the wedding of her daughter. This joyful circumstance she ascribed principally to the friendly behaviour of, Jones; her whole soul was fired with gratitude towards him, and all her looks, words, and actions, were so busted in expressing it, that her daughter, and even her new son-in-law, were very little the objects of her consideration.

Dinner was just ended when Mrs. Miller received a letter; but as we have had letters enough in this chapter, we shall communicate the contents in our next.

CHAP. X.

Confisting partly of Facts, and partly of Observations upon them.

THE letter then which arrived at the end of the preceding chapter was from Mr. Allworthy; and the purport of it was, his intention to come immediately to town, with his nephew Blifil, and a defire to be accommodated with his usual lodgings; which were the first

floor for himself, and the second for his nephew.

The cheerfulness which had before displayed itself in the countenance of the poor woman was a little clouded on this occasion. This news did, indeed, a good deal disconcert her. To requite so difinterested a match with her daughter, by presently turning her new son-in-law out of doors, appeared to her very unjustifiable on the one hand; and, on the other, she could scarce bear the thoughts of making any excuse to Mr. Allworthy, after all the obligations received from him, for depriving him of lodgings which were, indeed, frietly his due : for that gentleman, in conferring all his numberless benefits on others, acted by a rule diametrically opposite to what is practifed by most generous people. He contrived on all occasions to hide his beneficence, not only from the world, but even from the object of it. He constantly used the words lend and pay, instead of give; and by every other method he could invent always lessened with his tongue the favours he conferred, while he was heaping them with both his hands. When he fettled the annuity of fifty pounds a year, therefore, on Mrs. Miller, he told her, it was in confideration of always having her first floor when he was in town, (which he scarce ever intended to be), but that she might let it at any other time, for that he would always fend her a month's warning. He was now, however, hurried to town fo fuddenly, that he had no opportunity of giving fuch notice; and this hurry probably prevented him, when he wrote for his lodgings, adding, if they were then empty: for he would most certainly have been well satisfied to have relinquished them on a less sufficient excuse than what Mrs. Miller could now have made.

But there is a fort of persons who, as Prior excellently well remarks, direct their conduct by something—

Beyond the fix'd and fettled rules

[·] Of vice and virtue in the schools;

Beyond the letter of the law.'

To these it is so far from being sufficient, that their defence would acquit them at the Old Bailey, that they are not even contented, though conscience, the severest of all judges, should discharge them. Nothing short of the fair and honourable will fatisfy the delicacy of their minds: and if any of their actions fall short of this mark. they more and pine, and are as uneafy and restless as a murderer who is afraid of a ghoft, or the hangman.

Mrs. Miller was one of these. She could not conceal her uneafiness at this letter; with the contents of which' the had no fooner acquainted the company, and given fome hints of her diffress, than Jones, her good angel, presently relieved her anxiety. As for myself, Madam, fays he, my lodging is at your fervice at a moment's warning; and Mr. Nightingale, I am fure, as he cannot yet prepare a house fit to receive his lady, will consent to return to his new lodging, whither Mrs. Nightingale will certainly confent to go.' With which proposal both husband and wife instantly agreed.

The reader will easily believe, that the cheeks of Mrs. Miller began again to glow with additional gratitude to Jones; but, perhaps, it may be more difficult to perfuade him, that Mr. Jones, having, in his last speech, called her daughter Mrs. Nightingale, (it being the first time that agreeable found had ever reached her ears), gave the fond mother more fatisfaction, and warmed her heart more towards Jones, than his having diffipated

her present anxiety.

The next day was then appointed for the removal of the new married couple, and of Mr. Jones, who was likewise to be provided for in the same house with his friend. And now the ferenity of the company was again restored, and they passed the day in the utmost cheerfulness: all, except Jones, who, though he outwardly accompanied the rest in their mirth, felt many bitter pangs on account of his Sophia; which were not a little heightened by the news of Mr. Blifil's coming to town, (for he clearly faw the intention of his journey;) and what greatly aggravated his concern was, that Mrs.

Honour, who had promifed to inquire after Sophia, and to make her report to him early the next evening, had

disappointed him.

In the lituation that he and his miftress were in at this time, there were scarce any grounds for him to hope that he should hear any good news; yet he was as impatient to fee Mrs. Honour, as if he had expected she would bring him a letter with an affignation in it from Sophia; and bore the disappointment as ill. Whether this impatience arose from that natural weakness of the human mind, which makes it defirous to know the worft, and renders uncertainty the most intolerable of pains, or whether he still flattered himself with some secret hopes. we will not determine. But that it might be the last. whoever has loved, cannot but know: for, of all the powers exercised by this passion over our minds, one of the most wonderful is, that of supporting hope in the midst of despair. Difficulties, improbabilities, nay, impossibilities, are quite overlooked by it; so that to any man extremely in love, may be applied what Addison fays of Cæfar-

"The Alps and Pyrenæans fink before him!"

Yet it is easily true, that the same passion will sometimes make mountains of mole-hills, and produce despair in the midst of hope; but these cold fits last not long in good constitutions: which temper Jones was now in, we leave the reader to guess, having no exact information about it; but this is certain, that he had spent two hours in expectation; when, being unable any longer to conceal his uneasiness, he retired to his room; where his anxiety had almost made him frantic, when the following letter was brought him from Mrs. Honour, with which we shall present the reader verbatim et literatim.

· Sir.

[&]quot;I soud cartainly haf kaled on you a cordin to mi prommiss had-dunt itt bin that hur lashipp prevent me; for too be fur, Sir, you nose very well that evere pursun must luk furst at ome, and cartainly such anuther offar mite not

ave ever hapned, fo as I shud ave been justly to blam, had I not excepted of it when her lashipp was fo very kind as to offar to make mee bur one uman without mi ever afkin any fuch thing, to be fur flee is won of the best ladis in thee wurld, and pepil, who fafe to the kontrari, must bee veri wicket pepil in thare barts. To be fur if ever I ave fad any thing of that kine, it as bin thru ignorens, and I am bartili forri for it. I nose your onur to be a genteel man of more onur and onesty, if I ever faid any fuch thing, to repete it to burt a pore servant that has alwais ad thee gratest respect in the world for ure onur. To be fur won Shud kepe wons tung within wons teeth, for no boddi nofe what may bappen; and too be fur, if ani body ad told mee yesterday, that I shud haf bin in so gud a plase to-day, I Shud not haf beleeved it; for to be fur I never was adrend of any fuch thing, nor shud I ever ave foft after ani other bodi's plase; but as her lashipp was so kine of her one a corde too give it mee without afkin, to bee fur Mrs. Etoff berfelf, nor no other boddi can blam mee for exceptin such a thing when it falls in mi waye. I beg ure onur not too menshion ani thing of what I haf sad, for I wish ure onur all the gud luk in the wurld: and I don't cuestion butt thatt u will baf Madame Sofia in the end; but ass to my. felf ure onur nofe I kant bee of ani farder farvis to u in that matar, nou bein under thee cumand of anuthar parfon, and not me one mistres. I begg ure onur to say nothing of what paft, and believe mi to be, Sir, ure onur's umble farvant to cumand till deth.

· Honour Blackmore.

Various were the conjectures which Jones entertained for this step of Lady Bellaston; who, in reality, had little farther design than to secure within her own house the repository of a secret, which she chose should make no farther progress than it had made already: but mostly, she desired to keep it from the ears of Sophia; for though that young lady was almost the only one who would never have repeated it again, her ladyship could not persuade herself of this; since, as she now hated poor Sophia with the most implacable hatred, she conceived a reciprocal hatred to herself to be lodged in the tender breast of our heroine, where no such passion had ever yet found an entrance.

While Jones was territying himself with the apprehenfion of a thousand dreadful machinations, and deep political designs, which he imagined to be at the bottom of the promotion of Honour, Fortune, who hitherto seems to have been an utter enemy to his match with Sophia, tried a new method to put a final end to it, by throwing a temptation in the way of Jones, which in his present desperate situation, it seemed unlikely he should be able to resist.

CHAP. XI.

Containing curious, but not unprecedented, Matter. THERE was a lady, one Mrs. Hunt, who had often I feen Jones at the house where he lodged, being intimately acquainted with the women there, and, indeed, a very great friend to Mrs. Miller. Her age was about thirty-for the owned fix and twenty; her face and perfon very good, only inclining a little too much to be fat. She had been married young by her relations to an old Turkey Merchant; who having got a great fortune, had left off trade. With him the lived without reproach, but not without pain, in a ftate of great self-denial, for about twelve years; and her virtue was rewarded by his dying, and leaving her very rich. The first year of her widowhood was just at an end, and she had passed it in a good deal of retirement, feeing only a few particular triends, and dividing her time between her devotions and novels, of which she was always extremely fond. good health, a very warm constitution, and a great deal of religion, made it absolutely necessary for her to marry again; and the resolved to please herself in her second husband, as she had done her friends in the first. From her the following billet was brought to Jones-

Sir,

From the first day I saw you, I doubt my eyes have told you too plainly, that you were not indifferent to me; but neither my tongue nor my hand should have ever avowed it, had not the ladies of the family where you are lodged given me such a character of you, and told me such proofs of your virtue and goodness, as convince me you are not only the most agreeable, but the most worthy of men. I have also the satistical No.

faction to bear from them, that neither my person, understanding, or character, are disagreeable to you. I have a fortune sufficient to make us both happy, but which cannot make me so without you. In thus disposing of myself, I know I shall incur the censure of the world; but if I did not love you more than I fear the world, I should not be worthy of you. One only difficulty stops me: I am informed you are engaged in a commerce of gallantry with a woman of fashion. If you think it worth while to sacrifice that to the possession of me, I am yours; if not, forget my weakness, and let this remain an eternal secret between you and Arabella Hunt.

At the reading of this, Jones was put into a violent flutter. His fortune was then at a very low ebb, the fource being stopped from which hitherto he had been supplied. Of all he had received from Lady Bellaston, not above five guineas remained; and that very morning he had been dunned by a tradelman for twice that fum; his honourable mistress was in the hands of her father, and he had scarce any hopes ever to get her out of them again. To be subsisted at her expence, from that little fortune she had independent of her father, went much against the delicacy both of his pride and his love. This lady's fortune would have been exceeding convenient to him, and he could have no objection to her in any respect. On the contrary, he liked her as well as he did any woman, except Sophia: but to abandon Sophia, and marry another, that was impossible; he could not think of it upon any account: yet why should he not, fince it was plain she could not be his? Would it not be kinder to her, than to continue her longer engaged in a hopeless passion for him? Ought he not to do so in friendthip to her? This notion prevailed some moments, and he had almost determined to be false to her from a high point of honour; but that refinement was not able to stand very long against the voice of nature, which cried in his heart, that such friendship was treason to love. At last he called for pen, ink, and paper, and wrote as follows to Mrs. Hunt:

[&]quot; Madam,

It would be but a poor return to the favour you have done me, to facrifice any gallantry to the possession of you; and I would certainly

do it, though I were not disengaged, as at present I am, from any affair of that kind. But I should not be the bonest man you think me, if I did not tell you, that my affections are engaged to another, who is a woman of virtue, and one that I can never leave, though it is probable I shall never possesses. God forbid that, in return for your kindness to me, I should do you such an injury, as to give you my hand when I cannot give my heart! No; I had much rather starve than be guilty of that. Even though my mistress were married to another, I would not marry you, unless my heart had entirely effaced all impressions of her. Be assured that your secret was not more safe in your own breast than in that of your most obliged and grateful humble servant,

"T. Jones."

When our hero had finished and sent this letter, he went to his scrutoire, took out Miss Western's must, kissed it several times, and then strutted some turns about the room, with more satisfaction of mind than ever any Irishman selt in carrying off a fortune of fifty thousand pounds.

CHAP. XII.

A Discovery made by Partridge. THILE Jones was exulting in the consciousness of his integrity, Partridge came capering into the room, as was his custom when he brought, or fancied he brought, any good tidings. He had been dispatched that morning, by his mafter, with orders to endeavour, by the servants of Lady Bellaston, or by any other means, to discover whither Sophia had been conveyed; and he now returned, and with a joyful countenance told our hero, that he had found the lost bird. 'I have seen, Sir, fays he, Black George the game-keeper, who is one of the servants whom the squire hath brought with him to town. I knew him prefently, though I have not feen him these several years; but, you know, Sir, he is a very remarkable man, or, to use a purer phrase, he hath a most remarkable beard, the largest and blackest I ever faw. It was some time, however, before Black George could recollect me.

Well, but what is your good news? cries Jones; what do you know of my Sophia? — You shall know presently, Sir, answered Partridge; I am coming to it

148

as taft as I can. You are so impatient, Sir, you would come at the infinitive mood, before you can get to the imperative. As I was faying, Sir, it was some time before he recollected my face-'- Confound your face! cries Jones; what of my Sophia?'- Nay, Sir, anfwered Partridge, I know nothing more of Madam Sophia, than what I am going to tell you; and I should have told you all before this, if you had not interrupted me; but if you look so angry at me, you will frighten all of it out of my head, or, to use a purer phrase, out of my memory. I never faw you look so angry fince the day we left Upton, which I shall remember if I was to live a thousand years.'- Well, pray go on in your own way, faid Jones; you are resolved to make me mad, I find.'- 'Not for the world, answered Partridge; I have suffered enough for that already; which, as I said, I shall bear in my remembrance the longest day I have to live to.'- Well, but Black George! cries Jones.' Well, Sir, as I was faying, it was a long time before he could recollect me; for indeed I am very much altered fince I faw him. Non fum qualis eram. I have had troubles in the world; and nothing alters a man so much as grief: I have heard it will change the colour of a man's hair in a night. However, at last, know me he did, that's fure enough; for we are both of an age, and were at the same charity-school. George was a great dunce; but no matter for that: all men do not thrive in the world according to their learning. I am fure I have reason to say so; but it will be all one a thousand years hence. Well, Sir, where was I?-O-well! we no fooner knew each other, than, after many hearty shakes by the hand, we agreed to go to an alehouse and take a pot; and by good luck, the beer was some of the best I have met with fince I have been in town. Now, Sir, I am coming to the point; for no fooner did I name you, and told him, that you and I came to town together, and had lived together ever fince, than he called for another pot, and swore he would drink to your health; and, indeed, he drank your health so heartily, that I was overjoyed to see there was so much gratitude left in the world: and after we had emptied that pot, I said I would be my pot too, and so we drank another to your health; and then I made haste home to

tell you the news.'

What news! cries Jones: you have not mentioned a word of my Sophia.'—'Bless me! I had like to have forgot that. Indeed, we mentioned a great deal about young Madam Western; and George told me all: that Mr. Bliss is coming to town, in order to be married to her.'—''He had best make haste then, says I, or some-body will have her before he comes; and indeed, says I, Mr. Seagrim, it is a thousand pities somebody should not have her; for he certainly loves her above all the women in the world. I would have both you and she know, that is not for her fortune that he follows her; for I can assure you, as to matter of that, there is another lady, one of much greater quality and fortune than she can pretend to, who is so fond of somebody, that she comes after him day and night."

Here Jones fell into a passion with Partridge, for having, as he said, betrayed him; but the poor fellow answered, he had mentioned no name: 'Besides, Sir, said he, I can assure you, George is sincerely your friend, and wished Mr. Bliss at the devil more than once: nay, he said he would do any thing in his power upon earth to serve you; and so I am convinced he will. Betray you, indeed! why, I question whether you have a better friend than George upon earth, except myself, or one that would go farther to serve

you.'

Well, fays Jones, a little pacified, you fay this fellow, who I believe indeed is enough inclined to be my

friend, lives in the same house with Sophia.'

'In the same house? answered Partridge; why, Sir, he is one of the servants of the samily, and very well dressed I promise you he is: if it was not for his black beard, you would hardly know him.'

One fervice, then, at least, he may do me, fays

150 HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

Jones: sure he can certainly convey a letter to my Sophia?

You have hit the nail ad unguem, cries Partridge: how came I not to think of it? I will engage he shall

do it upon the very first mentioning.'

Well then, said Jones, do you leave me at present, and I will write a letter, which you shall deliver to him to-morrow mouning; for I suppose you know where to find him.

'O yes, Sir, answered Partridge; I shall certainly find him again; there is no fear of that. The liquor is too good for him to stay away long. I make no doubt but he will be there every day he stays in town.'

'So you don't know the street then where my Sophia is lodged?' cries Iones.

' Indeed, Sir, I do,' favs Partridge.

What is the name of the street?' cries Iones.

The name, Sir? why here, Sir, just by, answered Partridge; not above a street or two off. I don't, indeed, know the very name; for, as he never told me, if I had asked, you know it might have put some suspicion into his head. No, no, Sir; let me alone for that: I am too cunning for that, I promise you.'

'Thou art most wonderfully cunning indeed! replied Jones: however, I will write to my charmer, fince I believe you will be cunning enough to find him to-mor-

row at the alehouse.'

And now, having dismissed the sagacious Partridge, Mr. Jones sat himself down to write; in which employment we shall leave him for a time. And here we put an end to the sitteenth book.



BOOK XVI.

Containing the Space of Five Days.

CHAP. I.

Of Prologues.

I HAVE heard of a dramatic writer, who used to say, he would rather write a play than a prologue; in like manner, I think I can, with less pains, write one of the books of this history, than the presatory chapter to each of them.

To fay the truth, I believe many a hearty curse hath been devoted on the head of that author who first instituted the method of prefixing to his play that portion of matter which is called the prologue; and which, at first, was part of the piece itself, but of latter years hath had usually so little connection with the drama before which it flands, that the prologue to one play might as well ferve for any other. Those, indeed, of more modern date feem all to be written on the fame three topics, viz. an abuse of the taste of the town, a condemnation of all cotemporary authors, and an eulogium on the performance just about to be represented. The sentiments in all these are very little varied; nor is it possible they should; and, indeed, I have often wondered at the great invention of authors, who have been capable of finding fuch various phrases to express the same thing.

In like manner, I apprehend, some future historian (if any one shall do me the honour of imitating my manner) will, after much scratching his pate, bestow some good wishes on my memory, for having first established these several initial chapters; most of which, like modern prologues, may as properly be prefixed to any other book in this history as to that which they introduce; or, indeed, to any other history as to this.

But, however authors may suffer by either of these inventions, the reader will find sufficient emolument in the one, as the spectator hath long found in the other.

First, it is well known, that the prologue serves the critic for an opportunity to try his faculty of hissing, and

to tune his cat-call to the best advantage; by which means, I have known those musical instruments so well prepared, that they have been able to play in full concert

at the first rising of the curtain.

The same advantages may be drawn from these chapters, in which the critic will be always sure of meeting with something that may serve as a whetstone to his noble spirit; so that he may fall with a more hungry appetite for censure on the history itself. And here his sagacity must make it needless to observe, how artfully these chapters are calculated for that excellent purpose; for in these we have always taken care to intersperse somewhat of the sour or acid kind, in order to sharpen

and stimulate the said spirit of criticism.

Again, the indolent reader, as well as spectator, finds great advantage from both these; for as they are not obliged either to see the one, or read the other, and both the play and the book are thus protracted; by the former they have a quarter of an hour longer allowed them to sit at dinner, and by the latter they have the advantage of beginning to read at the fourth or fifth page instead of the first; a matter by no means of trivial consequence to persons who read books with no other view than to say they have read them; a more general motive to reading than is commonly imagined, and from which not only law books, and good books, but the pages of Homer and Virgil, of Swift and Cervantes, have been often turned over.

Many other are the emoluments which arise from both these; but they are for the most part so obvious, that we shall not at present stay to enumerate them; especially since it occurs to us, that the principal merit of both the prologue and the presace is, that they are short.

CHAP. II.

A whimsical Adventure which befel the Squire, with the distressed situation of Sophia.

WE must now convey the reader to Mr. Western's lodgings, which were in Piccadilly, where he was placed by the recommendation of the landlord at

the Hercules Pillars at Hyde-Park Corner; for at that inn, which was the first he saw on his arrival in town, he placed his horses: and in those lodgings, which were

the first he heard of, he deposited himself.

Here, when Sophia alighted from the hackney coach, which brought her from the house of Lady Bellaston, she desired to retire to the apartment provided for her; to which her father very readily agreed, and whither he attended her himself. A short dialogue, neither very material nor pleasant to relate minutely, then passed between them, in which he pressed her vehemently to give her consent to the marriage with Blissl, who, as he acquainted her, was to be in town in a few days; but, instead of complying, she gave a more peremptory and resolute resusal than she had ever done before. This so incensed her father, that after many bitter vows that he would force her to have him whether she would or no, he departed from her with many hard words and curses, locked the door, and put the key into his pocket.

While Sophia was left with no other company than what attend the closest state prisoner, namely, fire and candle, the squire sat down to regale himself over a bottle of wine, with his parson, and the landlord of the Hercules Pillars; who, as the squire said, would make an excellent third man, and could inform them of the news of the town, and how affairs went: 'For, to be sure, says he, he knows a great deal; since the horses of many

of the quality stand at his house."

In this agreeable fociety Mr. Western passed that evening, and great part of the succeeding day; during which period nothing happened of sufficient consequence to find a place in this history. All this time Sophia passed by herself; for her father swore she should never come out of her chamber alive, unless she first consented to marry Bliss; nor did he ever suffer the door to be unlocked, unless to convey her food, on which occasions he always attended himself.

The fecond morning after his arrival, while he and the parson were at breakfast together on a toast and a tankard, he was informed that a gentleman was below to wait on him.

A gentleman! quoth the squire; who the devil can he be? Do, doctor, go down and see who 'tis. Mr. Bliss can hardly be come to town yet! Go down, do;

and know what his business is."

The doctor returned with an account that he was a very well dreffed man; and by the ribband in his hat, he took him for an officer in the army; that he faid he had some particular business which he could deliver to none but Mr. Western himself.

An officer! cries the squire; what can any such fellow have to do with me? If he wants an order for baggage-waggons, I am no justice of peace here, nor can I grant a warrant. Let un come up then, if he

must speak to me.'

A very genteel man now entered the room; who having made his compliments to the squire, and defired the favour of being alone with him, delivered himself as follows:

'Sir, I come to wait upon you by the command of my lord Fellamar; but with a very different message from what, I suppose, you expect, after what passed the other night.'

'My lord who? cries the fquire; I never heard the

name o'un.

'His lordship, said the gentleman, is willing to impute every thing to the effect of liquor; and the most trisling acknowledgment of that kind will set every thing right; for, as he hath the most violent attachment to your daughter, you Sir, are the last person upon earth from whom he would resent an affront; and happy is it for you both, that he hath given such public demonstrations of his courage, as to be able to put up an affair of this kind, without danger of any imputation on his honour. All he desires, therefore, is, that you will, before me, make some acknowledgment; the slightest in the world will be sufficient; and he intends this afternoon to pay his respects to you, in order to ob-

tain your leave of vifiting the young lady on the footing

I don't understand much of what you say, Sir, said the squire; but I suppose, by what you talk about my daughter, that this is the lord which my cousin Lady Bellaston, mentioned to me, and said something about his courting my daughter. If so be, that how, that be the case—you may give my service to his lordship, and tell un, the girl is disposed of already.

Perhaps, Sir, faid the gentleman, you are not sufficiently apprized of the greatness of this offer. I believe, such a person, title and fortune, would be no where re-

fused.'

Look'e, Sir, answered the squire, to be very plain, my daughter is bespoke already: but if she was not, I would not marry her to a lord upon any account. I hate all lords; they are a parcel of courtiers and Hanoverians, and I will have nothing to do with them.

Well, Sir, said the gentleman, if that is your resolution, the message I am to deliver to you, is, that my lord desires the savour of your company this morning in

Hyde Park.'

You may tell my lord, said the squire, that I am busy, and cannot come. I have enough to look after at

home, and cannot ftir abroad on any account."

I am sure, Sir, quoth the other, you are too much a gentleman to send such a message: you will not, I am convinced, have it said of you, that, after having affronted a noble peer, you refuse him satisfaction. His lordship would have been willing, from his great regard to the young lady, to have made up matters in another way; but unless he is to look on you as a father, his honour will not suffer his putting up such an indignity as you must be sensible you offered him.

'I offered him! cries the squire; it is a d-n'd lie, I

never offered him any thing!'

Upon these words, the gentleman returned a very fiort verbal rebuke, and this he accompanied at the time time with some manual remonstrances, which no fooner reached the ears of Mr. Western, than the worthy squire began to caper very briskly about the room; bellowing at the same time with all his might, as if defirous to summon a greater number of spectators to be-

hold his agility.

The parson, who had left great part of the tankard unfinished, was not retired far; he immediately attended, therefore, on the squire's vociferation, crying, 'Bless me, Sir! what's the matter!'—' Matter! quoth the squire; here's a highwayman, I believe, who wants to rob and murder me; for he hath fallen upon me with that stick there in his hand, when I wish I may be dam—n'd if I gid un the least provocation.'

How, Sir! faid the captain, did you not tell me I

lied.

'No, as I hope to be faved, answered the squire. I believe I might say 'twas a lie, that I offered any affront to my lord; but I never said the words you lie; I understand myself better—and you might have understood yourself better than to fall upon a naked man. If I had a stick in my hand, you would not have dared to strike me, I'd have knocked thy lantern jaws about thy ears. Come down into the yard this minute, and I'll take a bout with thee at single stick for a broken head, that I will; or I will go into a naked room, and box thee for a bellyful. At unt half a man; at unt, I am sure.'

The captain, with some indignation, replied—'I see, Sir, you are below my notice; and I shall inform his lordship you are below his. I am sorry I have dirtied my fingers with you.' At which words he withdrew, the parson interposing to prevent the squire from stopping him, in which he easily prevailed, as the other, though he made some efforts for the purpose, did not seem very violently bent on success. However, when the captain was depared, the squire sent many curses, and some menaces, after him; but as these did not set out from his lips till the officer was at the bottom of the stairs, and grew louder and louder as he was more and

more remote, they did not reach his ears, or at least did

not retard his departure.

Poor Sophia, however, who in her prison heard all her father's outcries from first to last, began now first to thunder with her soot, and afterwards to scream as loudly as the old gentleman himself had done before, though in a much sweeter voice. These screams soon silenced the squire, and turned all his consideration towards his daughter, whom he loved so tenderly, that the least apprehension of any harm happening to her, threw him presently into agonies: for, except in that single instance, in which the whole suture happiness of her life was concerned, she was sovereign mistress of his inclinations.

Having ended his rage against the captain, with swearing he would take the law of him, the fquire now mounted up stairs to Sophia; whom, as soon as he had unlocked and opened the door, he found all pale and breathless. The moment, however, that she saw her father, the collected all her spirits, and catching him hold by the hand, she cried passionately - 'O my dear Sir! I am almost frightened to death; I hope to Heaven no harm hath happened to you!'- 'No, no,? cries the squire, no great harm. The rascal hath not hurt me much; but rat me if I don't ha' the la o' un.'-Pray, dear Sir, fays she, tell me what's the matter? Who is it that hath infulted you?'- I don't know the name o' un,' answered Western; some officer fellow I suppose, that we are to pay for beating us; but I'll make him pay this bout, if the rascal hath got any thing, which I suppose he hath not. For thof he was drest out so vine, I question whether he hath got a foot of land in the world.'- But, dear Sir, cries she, what was the occasion of your quarrel?'- What should it be, Sophy, answered the squire; but about you, Sophy? All my misfortune are about you; and you will be the death of your poor father at last, Here's a variet of a lord, the Lord knows who, forfooth! who hath ta'an a liking to you, and because I would not Vol. III.

gi un my consent, he sent me a kallenge. Come, de be a good girl Sophy, and put an end to all your father's troubles! Come, do consent to ha un! he will be in town within this day or two; do but promife me to marry un as foon as he comes, and you will make me the happiest man in the world! and I will make you the happiest woman --- You shall have the finest cloaths in London, and the finest jewels, and a coach and six at your command! I promised Allworthy already to give up half my estate --- Od rabbit it! I should hardly flick at giving up the whole.'- Will my papa be fo kind, fays the, as to hear me speak?'- Why wout ask, Sophy, cries he, when dost know that I had rather hear thy voice, than the music of the best pack of dogs in England. Hear thee, my dear little girl! I hope I shall hear thee as long as I live; for if ever I was to lose that pleasure, I would not gee a brass varden to live a moment longer. Indeed, Sophy, you do not know how I love you; indeed you don't! or you never could have run away and left your poor father, who hath no other joy, no other comfort upon earth, but his little Sophy!' At these words the tears flood in his eyes; and Sophia (with the tears ffreaming from her's) answered—' Indeed, my dear papa, I know you have loved me tenderly, and Heaven is my witness how fincerely I have returned you affections; nor could any thing but an apprehension of being forced into the arms of this man, have driven me to run from a father whom I love so passionately, that I would with pleasure sacrifice my life to his happiness. Nay, I have endeavoured to reason myself into doing more, and had almost worked up a resolution, to endure the most miserable of all lives to comply with your inclination. It was that refolution alone to which I could not force my mind; nor can I ever.'-Here the fquire began to look wild, and the foam appeared at his lips, which Sophia observing, begged to be heard out, and then proceeded, 'If my father's life, his health, or any real happiness of his was at stake, here stands your re-

HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING. folved daughter. There is not, my dear father, a mifery I would not suffer to preserve you. No; that most detested, most loathsome of all lots would I embrace, I would give my hand to Blifil for your fake.'-I tell thee, it will preserve me, answers the father; it will gee me health, happiness, life, every thing. Upon my foul, I shall die if dost refuse me. I shall break my heart; I shall, upon my foul.'- Is it possible, fays the, you can have such a desire to make me miferable?'- I tell you noa! answered he loudly; my whole defire is to make thee happy. Me ! d-n me, if there is a thing upon earth I would not do to fee thee happy.'- 'And will not my dear papa allow me to have the least knowledge of what will make me fo? If it be true, that happiness consists in opinion, what must be my condition, when I shall think myself the most miserable of all the wretches upon earth?'- Better think yourself so, said he, than know it, by being married to a poor bastardly vagabond.'- ' If it will content you, Sir, said Sophia, I will give you the most folemn promise never to marry him, nor any other while my papa lives, without his consent. Let me dedicate my whole life to your fervice; let me be again your poor Sophy, and my whole business and pleasure be, as it hath been, to please and divert you.'-- Look'e, Sophy, answered the squire, I am not to be chouzed in this manner. Your aunt Western would then have reafon to think me the fool she doth. No, no, Sophy; I'd have you to know, I have got more wisdom, and know more of the world, than to take the word of a woman in a matter where a man is concerned.'- 'How, Sir, have I deserved this want of confidence? said she: have I ever broke a fingle promise to you? or have I ever been found guilty of a falshood from my cradle?'- Look'e Sophy, cries he, that's neither here nor there. I am determined upon this match, and have him you shall; d --- n me if shat unt! d --- n me if shat unt, though dost hang thyself the next morning.'- At

repeating which words he clinched his fift, knit his

brows, bit his lips, and thundered so loud, that the poor afflicted, terrified Sophia, sunk trembling into her chair; and had not a flood of tears come immediately to her

relief, perhaps worse had followed.

Western beheld the deplorable condition of his daugh. ter with no more contrition or remorfe, than the turnkey of Newgate feels at viewing the agonies of a tender wife, when taking her last farewel of her condemn. ed husband; or rather, he looked down on her with the fame emotions which arise in an honest fair tradesman. who fees his debtor dragged to prison for ten pounds, which, though a just debt, the wretch is wickedly unable to pay. Or, to hit the cafe still more nearly, he felt the fame compunction with a bawd, when some poor innocent, whom the hath enfnared into her hands, falls into fits at the first proposal of what is called seeing company. Indeed, this resemblance would be exact, was it not that the bawd hath an interest in what she doth; and the father, though perhaps he may blindly think otherwise, can, in reality, have none in urging his daughter to almost an equal prostitution.

In this condition he left his poor Sophia; and departing with a very vulgar observation on the effect of tears, he locked the room, and returned to the parson; who said every thing he durst in behalf of the young lady; which though perhaps it was not quite so much as his duty required, yet was it sufficient to throw the squire into a violent rage, and into many indecent reflections on the whole body of the clergy, which we have too great an honour for that sacred function to

commit to paper.

CHAP. III.

What happened to Sophia during her Confinement

THE landlady of the house where the squire lodged had begun very early to entertain a strange opinion of her guests. However, as she was informed that the squire was a man of vast fortune, and as she had taken care to exact a very extraordinary price for her rooms, she did not think proper to give any offence; for though

he was not without some concern for the confinement of poor Sophia, of whose great sweetness of temper and affability the maid of the house had made fo favourable a report, which was confirmed by all the fquire's fervants; yet she had much more concern for her own interest, than to provoke one, whom, as the faid, the perceived

to be a very hastish kind of a gentleman.

Though Sophia ate but little, yet the was regularly ferved with her meals: indeed, I believe, if she had liked any one rarity, that the squire, however angry, would have spared neither pains nor cost to have procured it for her; fince, however strange it may appear to some of my readers, he really doated on his daughter, and to give her any kind of pleasure was the highest satisfaction of his life.

The dinner hour being arrived, Black George carried her up a pullet, the squire himself (for he had sworn not to part with the key) attending the door. As George deposited the dish, some compliments passed between him and Sophia, (for he had not seen her fince she left the country, and the treated every kervant with more respect than fome persons shew to those who are in a very slight degree their inferiors:) Sophia would have had him take the pullet back; faying, the could not eat; but George begged her to try, and particularly recommended to her the eggs of which he faid it was full.

All this time the squire was waiting at the door; but George was a great favourite with his mafter, as his employment was in the concerns of the highest nature, namely, about the game, and was accustomed to take many liberties. He had officiously carried up the dinner, being, as he said, very desirous to see his young lady: he made, therefore, no scruple of keeping his master standing above ten minutes, while civilities were paffing between him and Sophia, for which he received only a good-humoured rebuke at the door when he re-

turned.

The eggs of pullets, partridges, pheasants, &c. were, as George well knew, the most favourite dainties of Sofor the had scarce swallowed a single morsel in the latt

forty hours.

Though vexation hath not the same effect on all perfons as it usually hath on a widow, whose appetite is often rendered sharper than it can be rendered by the air on Bansted Downs, or Salisbury Plain, yet the fublimest grief, notwithstanding what some people may fay to the contrary, will eat at last: and Sophia herself, after some little consideration, began to dissect the fowl, which she found to be as full of eggs as George had re-

ported.

But if the was pleased with these, it contained something which would have delighted the Royal Society much more; for if a fowl with three legs be fo invaluable a curiofity, when perhaps time hath produced a thousand such, at what price shall we esteem a bird which so totally contradicts all the laws of animal œconomy, as to contain a letter in its belly? Ovid tells us of a flower into which Hyacinthus was metamorphosed, that bears letters on its leaves, which Virgil recommended as a miracle to the Royal Society of his days: but no age nor nation hath ever recorded a bird with a letter in its maw.

But though a miracle of this kind might have engaged all the academies des sciences in Europe, and perhaps in a fruitless enquiry, yet the reader, by barely recollecting the last dialogue which passed between Messieurs Jones and Partridge, will be very eafily fatisfied from whence this letter came, and how it found its passage into the fowl.

Sophia, notwithstanding her long fast, and notwithstanding her favourite dish was there before her, no sooner faw the letter, than she immediately snatched it up, tore it open, and read as follows· Madam,

Was I not sensible to rubom I have the bonour of writing, I should endeavour, bowever difficult, to paint the borrors of my mind, at the account brought me by Mrs. Honour: but as tenderness alone can have any true idea of the pangs which tenderness is capable of feeling, so can this most amiable quality, which my Sophia possesses in the most eminent degree, sufficiently inform her what her Jones must have suffered on this melancholy occasion. Is there a circumstance in the world which can beighten my agonies, when I hear of any misfortune which bath befallen you? Surely there is one only, and with that I am accurfed. It is, my Sophia, the dreadful consideration, that I am myself the wretched cause. Perhaps I bere do myself too much boncur; but none will envy me an bonour which costs me so extremely dear. Pardon me this presumption, and pardon me a greater still, if I ask you, whether my advice, my affistance, my presence, my absence, my death, or my tortures, can bring you any relief? Can the most perfect admiration, the most watchful observance, the most ardent love, the most melting tenderness, the most resigned submission to your will, make you amends for what you are to facrifice to my happinels? If they can, fly, my lovely angel, to those arms which are ever open to receive and protect you; and to which, whether you bring yourfelf alone, or the riches of the world with you, is, in my opinion, an alternative not worth regarding. If, on the contrary, wisdom shall predominate, and, on the most mature reflection, inform you, that the facrifice is too great; and if there be no way left to reconcile you to your father, and restore the peace of your dear mind, but by abandoning me, I conjure you, drive me for ever from your thoughts, exert your resolution, and let no compassion for my sufferings bear the least weight in that tender bosom. Believe me, Madam, I fo fincerely love you better than myfelf, that my great and principal end is your happiness. My first wish (why would not Fortune indulge me in it) was, and pardon me if I say, still is, to see you every moment the bappiest of women: my second wish, is to hear you are so: but no misery on earth can equal mine, while I think you owe an uneasy moment to him who is, Madam, in every sense, and to every purpole, your devoted "Thomas Fones."

What Sophia said, or did, or thought upon this letter, how often the read it, or whether more than once, shall all be left to our reader's imagination. The answer to it he may perhaps, see hereafter; but not at present; for this reason, among others, that she did now write any, and that for several good causes, one of which is this, that she had no paper, pen, nor ink.

In the evening, while Sophia was meditating on the let-

ter she had received, or on something else, a violent noise from below disturbed her meditations. This noise was no other than a round bout at altercation between two persons. One of the combatants, by his voice, she immediately diftinguished to be her father; but she did not so foon discover the shriller pipes to belong to the organ of her aunt Western, who was just arrived in town; and having, by means of one of her fervants, who stopped at the Hercules Pillars, learnt where her brother lodged, the drove directly to his lodgings.

We shall therefore take our leave at present of Sophia, and, with our usual good breeding, attend her

ladyship.

CHAP. IV.

In which Sophia is delivered from her Confinement. THE squire and the parson (for the landlord was now otherwise engaged) were smoking their pipes together, when the arrival of the lady was first fignified. The squire no sooner heard her name, than he immediately ran down to usher her up stairs; for he was a great observer of such ceremonials, especially to his fister, of whom he stood more in awe than of any other human creature, though he never would own this; nor did he,

perhaps, know it himself.

Mrs. Western, on her arrival in the dining-room, having flung herself into a chair, began thus to harangue-Well furely no one ever had fuch an intolerable journey! I think the roads, fince so many turnpike acts, are grown worse than ever. La, brother! how could you get into this odious place? No person of condition, I dare swear, ever set foot here before.'- I don't know cries the fquire; I think they do well enough; it was landlord recommended them. I thought, as he knew most of the quality, he could best shew me where to get among um.'-Well; and where's my niece? fays the lady: have you been to wait upon Lady Bellaston yet?'- 'Aye, aye, cries the fquire, your niece is fafe enough; the is up stairs in chamber.'- 'How! answered the lady, is my niece in this house, and doth the net know of my being here?'-

No, nobody can well get to her, fays the squire; for the is under lock and key. I have her fafe: I vetched her from my lady coufin the first night I came to town, and I have taken care o'her ever fince: she is as secure as a fox in a bag, I promise you.'- Good Heaven! returned Mrs. Western, what do I hear! I thought what a fine piece of work would be the confequence of my confent to your coming to town yourfelf; nay, it was indeed your own headstrong will; nor can I charge myself with ever having confented to it. Did not you promife me, brother, that you would take none of these headstrong measures? Was it not by these headstrong meafures that you forced my niece to run away from you in the country? Have you a mind to oblige her to take fuch another step!'- 'Z-ds and the devil! cries the fquire, dashing his pipe on the ground, did ever mortal hear the like? when I expected you would have commended me for all I have done, to be fallen upon in this manner!'- 'How! brother, faid the lady, have I ever given you the least reason to imagine I should commend you for locking up your daughter? Have I not often told you, that women in a free country are not to be treated with such arbitrary power? We are as free as the men, and I heartily wish I could not say we deserve that freedom better. If you expect I should stay a moment longer in this wretched house, or that I should ever own you again as my relation, or that I should ever trouble myself again with the affairs of your family, I infift upon it that my niece be fet at liberty this instant.

This she spoke with so commanding an air, standing with her back to the fire, with one hand behind her, and a pinch of snuff in the other, that I question whether Thalestris, at the head of her Amazons, ever made a more tremendous figure. It is no wonder, therefore, that the poor squire was not proof against the awe which she inspired. There, he cried, throwing down the key, there it is! Do what you please. I intended only to have kept her up till Blissl came to town, which can't be long;

and now if any harm happens in the mean time, remem .

ber who is to be blamed for it.'

'I will answer it with my life, cries Mrs. Western; but I shall not intermeddle at all, unless upon one condition; and that is, that you will commit the whole entirely to my care, without taking any one measure yourself, unless I shall eventually appoint you to act. If you ratify these preliminaries, brother, I yet will endeavour to preserve the honour of your family; if not, I shall continue in a neutral state.'

I pray you, good Sir, said the parson, permit yourfelf to be admonished this once by her ladyship: peradventure, by communing with young Madam Sophia, she will effect more than you have been able to perpetrate by

more rigorous measures.'

What, dost thee open upon me? cries the squire. If thee dost begin to babble, I shall whip thee in pre-

Cently.

Fie, brother! answered the lady, is this language to a clergyman? Mr. Supple is a man of sense, and gives you the best advice; and the whole world, I believe, will concur in his opinion; but I must tell you, I expect an immediate answer to my categorical proposals. Either cede your daughter to my disposal, or take her wholly to your own surprising discretion; and then I here, before Mr. Supple, evacuate the garrison, and renounce you and your family for ever.

I pray you, let me be a mediator, cries the parson:

let me supplicate you.'

'Why, there lies the key on the table, cries the squire. She may take un up, if she pleases; who hinders her?'

No, brother! answered the lady, I insist on the formality of its being delivered me, with a full ratification

of all the concessions stipulated.'

Why, then, I will deliver it to you—There 'tis, cries the squire. I am sure, sister, you can't accuse me of ever denying to trust my daughter to you. She bath

a lived wi' you a whole year and muore too at a time,

without my ever zeeing her.'

And it would have been happy for her, answered the lady, if she had always lived with me. Nothing of this kind would have happened under my eye.

Ave, certainly, cries he; I only am to blame!

Why, you are to blame, brother, answered she: I have been often obliged to tell you so, and shall always be obliged to tell you so. However, I hope, you will now amend, and gather so much experience from past errors, as not to defeat my wisest machinations by your blunders. Indeed, brother, you are not qualified for these negotiations. All your whole scheme of politics are wrong. I once more, therefore, insist that you do not intermeddle. Remember only what is past.'

Z-ds and bl-d, fifter! cries the fquire, what would you have me fay? you are enough to provoke the devil.

There now, faid she; just according to the old custom. I see, brother, there is no talking to you. I will appeal to Mr. Supple, who is a man of sense, if I said any thing which could put any human creature into a passion; but you are so wrong headed every way!

Let me beg you, Madam, said the parson, not to

irritate his worship.'

'Irritate him! said the lady; sure you are as great a fool as himself. Well, brother, since you have promised not to interfere, I will once more undertake the management of my niece. Lord have mercy upon all affairs which are under the directions of men! The head of one woman is worth a thousand of you! And now having summoned a servant to shew her to Sophia, she departed, bearing the key with her.

She was no sooner gone, than the squire (having first shut the door) ejaculated twenty bitches, and as many hearty curses against her, not sparing himself for having ever thought of her estate; but added, Now one hath been a slave so long, it would be a pity to lose it at last, for want of holding out a little longer. The bitch

The parson greatly commended this resolution; and now the squire having ordered in another bottle, which was his usual method when any thing either pleased or vexed him, did, by drinking plentifully of this medicinal julep, so totally wash away his choler, that his temper was become perfectly placid and serene, when Mrs. Western returned with Sophia into the room. The young lady had on her hat and capuchin: and the aunt acquainted Mr. Western, that she intended to take her niece with her to her own lodgings; 'For, indeed, brother, says she, these rooms are not fit to receive a christian soul in.'

Very well, Madam, quoth Western; whatever you please. The girl can never be in better hands than yours; and the parson here can do me the justice to say, that I have said fifty times behind your back, that you was one of the most sensible women in the world.

'To this, cries the parson, I am ready to bear tes-

timony.'

'Nay, brother, says Mrs. Western, I have always, I am sure, given you as savourable a character. You must own you have a little too much hastiness in your temper; but when you will allow yourself time to reslect, I never knew any man more reasonable.'

Why then, fifter, if you think so, said the squire, here's your good health with all my heart. I am a little passionate sometimes, but I scorn to bear any malice. Sophy, do you be a good girl; and do every thing your

aunt orders you.'

'I have not the least doubt of her, answered Mrs. Western, she hath already had an example before her eyes in the behaviour of that wretch her cousin Harriet, who ruined herself by neglecting my advice. O, brother, what think you? you was hardly gone out of hearing, when you set out for London, when who should arrive but that impudent sellow with the odious Irish

name—that Fitzpatrick. He broke abruptly upon me without notice, or I would not have feen him. He ran on a long unintelligible story about his wife, to which he forced me to give him a hearing; but I made him very little answer, and delivered him the letter from his wife, which I bid him answer himself. I suppose the wretch will endeavour to find us out; but I beg you will not see her, for I am determined I will not.

"I zee her! answered the squire; you need not sear me. I'll gee no encouragement to such undutiful wenches. It is well for the sellow her husband, I was not at home. Od rabbit it! he should have taken a dance thro' the horse-pond, I promise un. You zee, Sophy, what undutifulness brings volks to. You have

an example in your own family.

Brother, cries the aunt, you need not shock my niece by such odious repetitions. Why will you not leave every thing entirely to me?'—'Well, well, I wull,

I wull!' faid the fquire.

And now Mrs. Western, luckily for Sophia, put an end to the conversation, by ordering chairs to be called: I say, luckily; for had it continued much longer, fresh matter of dissention would, most probably, have risen between the brother and sister; between whom education and sex made the only disserence; for both were equally violent, and equally positive: they had both a vast affection for Sophia, and both a sovereign contempt for each other.

CHAP. V.

In which Jones receives a Letter from Sophia, and goes to a Play with Mrs. Miller and Partridge.

THE arrival of Black George in town, and the good officers which that grateful fellow had promifed to do for his old benefactor, greatly comforted Jones in the midst of all the anxiety and uneasiness which he had suffered on the account of Sophia; from whom, by the means of the said George, he received the following answer to his letter: which Sophia, to whom the use of pen, ink, and paper, was restored with her liberty, wrote Vol. III.

6 Sir.

As I do not doubt your fincerity in what you write, you will be pleased to hear that some of my affictions are at an end, by the arrival of my aunt Western; with whom I am at present, and with whom I enjoy all the liberty I can defire. One promise my aunt bath infifted on my making, which is, that I will not see or converse with any per-fon without her knowledge and conjent. This promise I have most for lemnly given, and shall most inviolably keep: and though she kath not expressly forbidden me writing, yet that must be an omission from forgetfulnels; or this, perbays, is included in the word converfing. However, as I cannot but consider this as a breach of her generous confidence in my bonour, you cannot expect that I shall, after this, continue to write myself, or to receive letters, without her knowledge. A promise is with me a very sacred thing, and to be extended to every thing understood from it, as well as to what is expressed by it; and this consideration may perhaps, on reflection, afford you some comfort. But why should I mention to you a comfort of this kind? For though there is one thing in which I can never comply with the best of fathers, yet am I firmly resolved newer to all in defiance of him, or to take any step of consequence without his consent. A firm persuasion of this must teach you to divert your thoughts from what Fortune bath (perhaps) made impossible. This your own interest persuades you. This may reconcile you, I hope, to Mr. Allworthy; and if it will, you have my injunctions to pursue it. Accidents have laid some obligations on me, and your good intentions probably more. Fortune may, perhaps, be some time kinder to us both than at present. Believe this, that I shall always think of you as I think you deserve; and am, Sir, your obliged bumble fervant, Sopbia Western.

ept this, which is now of no service to me; which I know you must want; and think you owe the trifle only to that fortune by which you

found it.' *

A child who hath just learnt his letters would have spelt this letter out in less time than Jones took in reading it. The sensations it occasioned were a mixture of joy and grief; somewhat like what divide the mind of a good man, when he peruses the will of his deceased friend, in which a large legacy, which his distresses make the most welcome, is bequeathed to him. Upon the whole, however, he was more pleased than displeased;

^{*} Meaning, perhaps, the bank bill for 1001.

and, indeed, the reader may probably wonder that he was displeased at all: but the reader is not quite so much in love as was poor Jones; and love is a disease, which, though it may in some instances resemble a consumption, (which it sometimes causes,) in others proceeds in direct opposition to it, and particularly in this, that it never flatters itself, or sees any one symptom in a favourable

light.

One thing gave him complete satisfaction, which was, that his miffret's had regained her liberty, and was now with a lady where the might, at least, affure herfelf of a decent treatment. Another confortable circumstance was, the reference which she made to her promite of never marrying any other man: for however difinterested he might imagine his passion, and notwithstanding all the generous overtures made in his letter, I very much question whether he could have heard a more afflicting piece of news than that Sophia was married to another, though the match had been never so great, and never so likely to end in making her completely happy. refined degree of Platonic affection, which is absolutely detached from the flesh, and is, indeed, entirely and purely spiritual, is a gift confined to the female part of the creation; many of whom I have heard declare (and. doubtless, with great truth) that they would, with the utmost readiness, resign a lover to a rival, when such refignation was proved to be necessary for the temporal interest of such lover. Hence, therefore, I conclude, that this affection is in nature; though I cannot pretend to fay, I have ever feen an inftance of it.

Mr. Jones having spent three hours in reading and kissing the aforesaid letter, and being, at last, in a state of good spirits, from the last-mentioned consideration, he agreed to carry an appointment, which he had before made, into execution: this was, to attend Mrs. Miller, and her youngest daughter, into the gallary at the play-house, and to admit Mr. Partridge as one of the company. For as Jones had really that taste for humour which many affect, he expected to enjoy much entertain-

ment in the criticisms of Partridge; from whom he expected the simple dictates of nature, unimproved in-

deed, but likewife unadulterated by art.

In the first row, then, of the first gallery, did Mr. Jones, Mrs. Miller, her youngest daughter, and Partridge, take their places. Partridge immediately declared, it was the finest place he had ever been in. When the first music was played, he said, it was a wonder how fo many fidlers could play at one time, without putting one another out. While the fellow was lighting the upper candles, he cried out to Mrs. Miller .-- Look. look. Madam! the very picture of the man in the end of the common prayer-book, before the gunpowder-treason service.' Nor could he help observing with a figh, when all the candles were lighted, that here were candles enough burnt in one night, to keep an

honest poor family for a twelvemonth.

As foon as the play, which was Hamlet Prince of Denmark, began, Partridge was all attention; nor did he break filence, till the entrance of the ghost; upon which he afked Jones, what that man was in the strange dress: ' Something, said he, like what I have seen in a picture. Sure it is not armour, is it?' Jones answered. That is the ghost.' To which Partridge replied, with a smile, ' Persuade me to that, Sir, if you can. Tho' I cannot fay I ever actually faw a ghost in my life, yet I am certain I should know one, if I saw him, better than that comes to. No, no, Sir; ghosts don't appear in fuch dresses as that neither.' In this mistake, which caused much laughter in the neighbourhood of Partridge. he was fuffered to continue till the scene between the ghost and Hamlet, when Partridge gave that credit to Mr. Garrick, which he had denied to Jones, and fell into so violent a trembling, that his knees knocked against each other. Jones asked him what was the matter, and whether he was afraid of the warrior upon the stage? 'O la, Sir, said he, I perceive now it is what you told me. I am not afraid of any thing; for I know it is but a play: and if it really was a ghost, it could

do one harm at such a distance, and in so much company: and yet, if I was frightened, I am not the only person.'- Why, who, cries Jones, dolt thou take to be such a coward here befides thyself?"- Nay, you may call me a coward if you will; but if that little man there upon the stage is not frightened, I never faw any man frightened in my life. Aye, aye; go along with you! Ave. to be fure! Who's fool then? Will you? Lud have mercy upon such fool-hardiness? Whatever happens, it is good enough for you. Follow you! I'd follow the devil as foon: nay, perhaps it is the devil; for they fay he can put on what likeness he pleases. Oh! here he is again. No farther! No, you are gone far enough already; farther than I'd have gone for all the king's dominions.' Jones offered to speak, bur Partridge cried, 'Hush, hush, dear Sir! don't you hear him?" And during the whole speech of the ghost, he sat with his eyes fixed, partly on the ghost, and partly on Hamlet, and with his mouth open; the fame passions which succeeded each other in Hamlet, succeeding likewife in him.

When the scene was over, Jones said, 'Why Partridge, you exceed my expectations. You enjoy the play more than I conceived possible.'- 'Nay, Sir, answered Partridge, if you are not asraid of the devil, I can't help it; but, to be fure, it is natural to be furprised at such things; though I know there is nothing in them: not that it was the ghoft that surprised me, neither; for I should have known that to have been only a man in a strange dress: but when I saw the little man so frightened himself, it was that which took hold of me.'- And dost thou imagine then, Partridge, cries Jones, that he was really frightened?'- 'Nay, Sir, faid Partridge, did not you yourself observe afterwards, when he found it was his own father's spirit, and how he was murdered in the garden, how his fear forfook him by degrees, and he was ftruck dumb with forrow, as it were, just as I should have been, had it been my own case. But hush! Ola! what noise is that! There

P 3

he is again! Well, to be certain, though I know there is nothing at all in it, I am glad I am not down yonder, where those men are!' Then turning his eyes again upon Hamlet—' Aye, you may draw your sword; what sig-

nifies a fword against the power of the devil?'

During the lecond act, Partridge made very few remarks. He greatly admired the fineness of the dresses; nor could he help observing upon the king's countenance. 'Well, said he, how people may be deceived by faces! Nulla sides fronti, is, I find, a true saying. Who would think, by looking in the king's face, that he had ever committed a murder?' He then inquired after the ghost; but Jones, who intended he should be surprised, gave him no other satisfaction, than that he might possibly see him again soon, and in a stash of fire.

Partridge fat in fearful expectation of this: and now, when the ghoft made his next appearance, Partridge cried out, 'There, Sir, now! what fay you now? is he frightened now, or no? As much frightened as you think me, (and, to be fure, nobody can help some fears,) I would not be in so bad a condition as what's his name, Squire Hamlet, is, there, for all the world. Bless me, what's become of the spirit? As I am a living soul, I thought I faw him fink into the earth !'- ' Indeed you faw right, answered Jones.'- Well, well, cries Partridge, I know it is only a play: and befides, if there was any thing in all this, Madam Miller would not laugh so; for as to you, Sir, you would not be afraid, I believe, if the devil was here in person. There, there, -aye, no wonder you are in fuch a passion; shake the wile, wicked wretch, to pieces! If she was my own mother, I should serve her so. To be sure, all duty to mother is forfeited by fuch wicked doings. Aye, go about your bufiness; I hate the fight of you.'

Our critic was now pretty filent till the play which Hamlet introduces before the king. This he did not at first understand, till Jones explained it to him; but he no seoner entered into the spirit of it, than he began to

bless himself that he had never committed murder. Then turning to Mrs. Miller, he asked her, if she did not imagine the king looked as if he was touched!—
Though he is, said he, a good actor, and doth all he can to hide it. Well, I would not have so much to answer for, as that wicked man there hath, to sit upon a much higher chair than he sits upon. No wonder he run away—for your sake, I'll never trust an innocent

face again.

The grave-digging scene next engaged the attention of Partridge, who expressed much surprise at the number of skulls thrown upon the stage. To which Iones anfwered, that it was one of the most famous burial-places about town. 'No wonder, then, cries Partridge, that the place is haunted. But I never faw in my life a worse grave-digger. I had a sexton, when I was a clerk, that should have dug three graves while he is digging one. The fellow handles a spade as if it was the first time he had ever one in his hands. Aye, aye, you may fing. You had rather fing than work, I believe.' Upon Hamlet's taking up the skull, he cried out- Well, it is frange to fee how fearless some men are: I never could bring myself to touch any thing belonging to a dead man, on any account. He feemed frightened enough too at the ghoft, I thought. Neme omnibus boris sapit.

Little more worth remembering occurred during the play; at the end of which, Jones asked him, which of the players he liked best? To this he answered, with some appearance of indignation at the question—'The king, without doubt.'—'Indeed, Mr. Partridge, says Mrs. Miller, you are not of the same opinion with the town; for they are all agreed, that Hamlet is acted by the best player who was ever on the stage.'—'He the best player! cries Partridge, with a contemptuous sneer; why I could act as well as he myself. I am sure, if I had seen a ghost, I should have looked in the very same manner, and done just as he did. And then, to be sure, in that scene, as you called it, between him

and his mother, where you told me he acted fo fine, why, Lord help me! any man, that is, any good man, that had such a mother, would have done exactly the same. I know you are only joking with me; but, indeed, Madam, though I never was at a play in London, yet I have seen acting before in the country; and the king for my money; he speaks all his words distinctly, half as loud again as the other. Any body may see he is an actor.

While Mrs. Miller was thus engaged in conversation with Partridge, a lady came up to Mr. Jones whom he immediately knew to be Mrs. Fitzpatrick. She said she had seen him from the other part of the gallery, and had taken that opportunity of speaking to him, as she had something to say, which might be of great service to himself. She then acquainted him with her lodgings, and made him an appointment the next day in the morning; which, upon recollection, she presently changed to the afternoon; at which time Jones promised to attend her.

Thus ended the adventure of the playhouse; where Partridge had afforded great' mirth, not only to Jones and Mrs. Miller, but to all who sat within hearing, who were more attentive to what he said, than to any thing that passed on the stage.

He durst not go to bed all that night, for fear of the ghost; and, for many nights after, sweated for two or three hours, before he went to sleep, with the same apprehensions; and waked several times in great horrors, crying out—Lord have mercy upon us I there it is !'

CHAP. VI.

In which the History is obliged to go back.

IT is almost impossible for the best parent to observe an exact impartiality to his children, even though no superior merit should bias his affection; but sure a parent can hardly be blamed, when that superiority determines his preference.

As I regard all the personages of this history in the light of my children, so I must confess the same inclina-

tion of partiality to Sophia; and for that, I hope the reader will allow me the same excuse, from the superio-

rity of her character.

This extraordinary tenderness, which I have for my heroine, never suffers me to quit her any long time without the utmost reluctance. I could now, therefore, return impatiently to inquire, what hath happened to this levely creature since her departure from her father's, but that I am obliged first to pay a short visit to Mr. Bliss.

Mr. Western, in the first confusion into which his mind was cast, upon the sudden news he received of his daughter, and in his first hurry to go after her, had not one thought of sending any account of the discovery to Bliss. He had not gone far, however, before he recollected himself; and accordingly stopped at the very first inn he came to, and dispatched away a messenger to Bliss with his having sound Sophia, and with his firm resolution to marry her to him immediately, if he would

come up after him to town.

As the love which Bliffl had for Sophia was of that violent kind, which nothing but the loss of her fortune. or some such accident, could lessen, his inclination to the match was not at all altered by her having run away, though he was obliged to lay this to his own account. He very readily, therefore, embraced this offer. Indeed, he now proposed the gratification of a very strong passion besides avarice, by marrying this young lady; and this was, hatred: for he concluded that matrimony afforded an equal opportunity of fatisfying either hatred or love; and this opinion is very properly verified by much experience. To fay the truth, if we are to judge by the ordinary behaviour of married persons to each other, we shall, perhaps, be apt to conclude, that the generality feek the indulgence of the former passion only in their union of every thing but of hearts.

There was one difficulty, however, in his way, and this arose from Mr. Allworthy. That good man, when he found, by the departure of Sophia, (for neither that,

nor the cause of it, could be conceased from him,) the great aversion which she had for his nephew, began to be seriously concerned that he had been deceived into carrying matters so far. He by no means concurred with the opinions of those parents, who think it as immaterial to consult the inclinations of their children, in the affair of marriage, as to solicit the good pleasure of their servants, when they intend to take a journey; and who are, by law, or decency at least, withheld often from using absolute force. On the contrary, as he esteemed the institution to be of the most sacred kind, he thought every preparatory caution necessary to preserve it holy and inviolate; and very wisely concluded, that the surely way to effect this was by laying the foundation in previous affection.

Bliss, indeed, soon cured his uncle of all anger on the score of deceit, by many vows and protestations that he had been deceived himself, with which the many declarations of Western very well tallied; but how to persuade Allworthy to consent to the renewing his addresses, was a matter of such apparent difficulty, that the very appearance was sufficient to have deterred a less enterprising genius; but this young gentleman so well knew his own talents, that nothing within the province of cunning

feemed to him hard to be achieved.

Here then he represented the violence of his own affection, and the hopes of subduing aversion in the lady by perseverance. He begged, that in an affair on which depended all his future repose, he might at least be at liberty to try all fair means for success. Heaven forbid, he said, that he should ever think of prevailing by any other than the most gentle methods! 'Besides, Sir, said he, if they sail, you may then (which will be surely time enough) deny your consent.' He urged the great and eager desire which Mr. Western had for the match; and lastly, he made great use of the name of Jones, to whom he imputed all that had happened; and from whom, he said, to preserve so valuable a young lady, was even an act of charity.

All these arguments were well seconded by Thwackum, who dwelt a little stronger on the authority of parents than Mr. Bliss himself had done. He ascribed the measures which Mr. Bliss was desirous to take to christian motives: 'And though, says he, the good young gentleman hath mentioned charity last, I am almost convinced it is his first and principal consideration.'

Square, possibly, had he been present, would have fung to the same tune, though in a different key, and would have discovered much moral fitness in the proceeding; but he was now gone to Bath for the recovery of his

health.

Allworthy, though not without reluctance, at last yielded to the desires of his nephew. He said, he would accompany him to London, where he might be at liberty to use every honest endeavour to gain the lady; 'But I declare, said he, I will never give my consent to any absolute force being put on her inclinations; nor shall you ever have her unless she can be brought freely to compliance,

Thus did the affection of Allworthy for his nephew betray the superior understanding to be triumphed over by the inferior; and thus is the prudence of the best of heads often deseated by the tenderness of the best of

hearts.

Blifil having obtained this unhoped for acquiescence in his uncle, rested not till he carried his purpose into execution; and as no immediate business required Mr. Allworthy's presence in the country, and little preparation is necessary to men for a journey, they set out the very next day; and arrived in town that evening, when Mr. Jones, as we have seen, was diverting himself with Partridge at the play.

The morning after his arrival, Mr. Blifil waited on Mr. Western, by whom he was most kindly and graciously received, and from whom he had every possible assurance (perhaps more than was possible) that he should very shortly be as happy as Sophia could make him; nor would the squire suffer the young gentleman to return to

CHAP. VII.

In which Mr. Western pays a Visit to his Sister, in Company with Mr. Blifil.

MRS. Western was reading a lecture on prudence and matrimonial politics to her niece, when her brother and Blisil broke in with less ceremony than the laws of visiting require. Sophia no sooner saw Blisil than she turned pale, and almost lost the use of all her faculties; but her aunt, on the contrary, waxed red, and having all her faculties at command, began to exert her

tongue on the fquire.

Brother, said she, I am assonished at your behavior. Will you never learn any regard to decorum? Will you still look upon every apartment as your own, or as belonging to one of your country tenants? Do you think yourself at liberty to invade the privacies of women of condition, without the least decency or notice? Why, what a pox is the matter now? quoth the squire: one would think I had caught you at—. None of your brutality, Sir, I beseech you, answered she. You have surprised my poor niece so, that she can hardly, I see, support herself. Go, my dear, retire, and endeavour to recruit your spirits, for I see you have occasion. At which words, Sophia, who never received a more welcome command, hastily withdrew.

To be sure, sister, cries the squire, you are mad, when I have brought Mr. Blisil here to court her, to

force her away."

when you know in what situation affairs are, to—I am sure I ask Mr. Bliss's pardon; but he knows very well to whom to impute so disagreeable a reception. For my own part, I am sure I shall always be very glad to see Mr. Bliss; but his own good sense would not have suffered him to proceed so abruptly, had not you compelled him to it.

Blifil bowed, and ftanimered, and looked like a fool;

but Western, without giving him time to form a speech for the purpose, answered, Well, well, I am to blame, if you will; I always am, certainly, but come, let the girl be setched back again, or let Mr. Bliss go to her. He's come up on purpose, and there's no time to be lost.'

Brother, cries Mrs. Western, Mr. Bliss, I am confident, understands himself better, than to think of seeing my niece any more this morning, after what hath happened. Women are of a more nice contexture, and our spirits, when disordered, are not to be recomposed in a moment. Had you suffered Mr. Bliss to have sent his compliments to my niece, and to have desired the favour of waiting on her in the afternoon, I should possibly have prevailed on her to have seen him; but now I despair of bringing about any such matter.

'I am very forry, Madam, cried Blifil, that Mr. Western's extraordinary kindness to me, which I can never enough acknowledge, should have occasioned—.'
—'Indeed, Sir, said she, interrupting him, you need make no apologies, we all know my brother so well.'

'I don't care what any body knows of me, answered the fquire: but when must he come to see her? for confider, I tell you, he is come up on purpose, and so is Allworthy.'- Brother, faid the, whatever meffage Mr. Blifil thinks proper to fend to my niece shall be delivered to her; and I suppose she will want no instructions to make a proper answer. I am convinced she will not refuse to see Mr. Blifil at a proper time.'- 'The devil she wont,' answered the squire. 'Odsbud!don't we know-I fay nothing; but some volk are wifer than all the world. If I might have had my will, she had not run away before: and now I expect to hear every moment she is guone again. For, as great a vool as some volks thinks me, I know very well she hates -. '- No matter, brother, replied Mrs. Western, I will not hear my niece abused. It is a reflection on my family. She is an honour to it: and she will be an honour to it, I promise you. I will pawn my whole reputation in the world on VOL. III.

her conduct. I shall be glad to see you, brother, in the afternoon; for I have somewhat of importance to mention to you. At present, Mr. Blifil, as well as you, must excuse me; for I am in haste to dress.'- Well, but, said the squire, do appoint a time.'- Indeed, said she, I can appoint no time. I tell you, I will see you in the afternoon. - What the devil would you have me do? cries the squire, turning to Blifil: I can no more turn her, than a beagle can turn an old hare. Perhaps she will be in a better humour in the afternoon, - I am condemned, I see Sir, to misfortune, answered Blifil: but I shall always own my obligations to you.' He then took a ceremonious leave of Mrs. Western, who was altogether as ceremonious on her part; and then they departed; the squire muttering to himself with an oath, that Blifil should see his daughter in the afternoon.

If Mr. Western was little pleased with this interview, Blisil was less. As to the former, he imputed the whole behaviour of his sister to her humour only, and to her dissatisfaction at the omission of ceremony in the visit; but Blisil saw a little deeper into things. He suspected somewhat of more consequence, from two or three words which dropped from the lady; and, to say the truth, he suspected right, as will appear when I have unfolded the several matters which will be contained in the following chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

Schemes of Lady Bellaston for the Ruin of Jones.

OVE had taken too deep a root in the mind of Lord Fellamar, to be plucked up by the rude hands of Mr. Western. In the heat of resentment he had indeed given a commission to Captain Egglane, which the captain had far exceeded in the execution; nor had it been executed at all, had his lordship been able to find the captain after he had seen Lady Bellaston, which was in the afternoon of the day after he had received the affront; but so industrious was the captain in the discharge of his duty, that having, after long inquiry, found out the

fquire's lodgings very late in the evening, he sat up all night at a tavern, that he might not miss the squire in the morning, and by that means missed the revocation

which my lord had fent to his lodgings.

In the afternoon, then, next after the intended rape of Sophia, his lordship, as we have said, made a visit to Lady Bellaston, who laid open so much of the character of the squire, that his lordship plainly saw the absurdity he had been guilty of in taking any offence at his words, especially as he had those honourable designs on his daughter.-He then unbosomed the violence of his pasfion to Lady Bellaston, who readily undertook the cause, and encouraged him with certain affurance of a most favourable reception from all the elders of the family, and from the father himself when he should be sober, and should be made acquainted with the nature of the offer made to his daughter. The only danger, she faid, lay in the fellow she had formerly mentioned; who, though a beggar and a vagabond, had, by some means or other, fhe knew not what, procured himself tolerable cloarhs, and passed for a gentleman. 'Now, says she, as I have, for the fake of my coufin, made it my bufiness to inquire after this fellow, I have luckily found out his lodgings:' with which she then acquainted his lordship .- 'I am thinking, my lord, added the (for this fellow is too mean for your personal resentment,) whether it would. not be possible for your lordship to contrive some method of having him pressed, and sent on board a ship. Neither law nor conscience forbid this project; for the fellow, I promise you, however well drest, is but a vagabond, and as proper as any fellow in the threets to be pressed into the service; and as for the conscientious part, furely the preservation of a young lady from such ruin is a most meritorious act: nay, with regard to the fellow. himself, unless he could succeed (which Heaven forbid!) with my cousin, it may probably be the means of preferving him from the gallows, and perhaps may make his fortune in an honest way.'

Lord Fellamar very heartily thanked her ladyship for

the part which she was pleased to take in the affair, upon the success of which his whole suture happiness entirely depended. He said, he saw at present no objection to the pressing scheme, and would consider of putting it in execution. He then most earnestly recommended to her ladyship, to do him the honour of immediately mentioning his proposals to the family, to whom, he said, he offered a carte blanche, and would settle his fortune in almost any manner they should require: and after uttering many cestacies and raptures concerning Sophia, he took his leave and departed; but not before he had received the strongest charge to beware of Jones, and to lose no time in securing his person where he should no longer be in a capacity of making any attempts to the ruin of the young lady.

The moment Mrs. Western was arrived at her lodgings, a card was dispatched with her compliments to Lady Bellaston; who no sooner received it, than, with the impatience of a lover, she slew to her cousin; rejoicing at this fair opportunity, which, beyond her hopes, offered itself: for she was much better pleased with the prospect of making the proposals to a woman of sense, and who knew the world, than to a gentleman whom she honoured with the appellation of Hottentot; though, indeed from him she apprehended no danger of a re-

fufal.

The two ladies being met, after very short previous ceremonials, sell to business, which was indeed almost as soon concluded as began; for Mrs. Western no sooner heard the name of Lord Fellamar, than her cheeks glowed with pleasure; but when she was acquainted with the eagerness of his passion, the earnestness of his proposals, and the generosity of his offer, she declared her full satisfaction in the most explicit terms.

In the progress of their conversation, their discourse turned to Jones; and both cousins very pathetically lamented the unfortunate attachment which both agreed Sophia had to that young fellow; and Mrs. Western entirely attributed it to the folly of her brother's management. She concluded, however, at last, with declaring her confidence in the good understanding of her niece; who, though she would not give up her affection in favour of Blisil, will, I doubt not, says she, soon be prevailed upon to facrifice a simple inclination to the addresses of a sine gentleman, who brings her both a title and a large estate: for, indeed, added she, I must do Sophy the justice to consess, this Blisil is but a hideous kind of tellow; as you know, Bellaston, all country gentlemen are; and hath nothing but his fortune to recommend him.

'Nay, faid Lady Bellaston, I don't then so much wonder at my cousin: for I promise you, this Jones is a very agreeable fellow, and hath one virtue, which the men say is a great recommendation to us. What do you think, Bell!—I shall certainly make you laugh; nay, I can hardly tell you myself for laughing—Will you believe that the fellow had the assurance to make love to me? but if you should be inclined to disbelieve it, here is evidence enough, his own hand-writing, I assure you.' She then delivered her cousin the letter with the proposals of marriage; which, if the reader hath a desire to see, he will find already on record, in the sistenth book of this history.

'Upon my word, I am astonished, said Mrs. Western: this is, indeed, a master piece of assurance. With your leave, I may possibly make some use of this letter.'—'You have my sull liberty, cries Lady Bellaston, to apply it to what purpose you please. However, I would not have it shewn to any but Miss Western; nor to her, unless you find occasion.'—'Well, and how did you use the fellow? returned Mrs. Western.—'Not as a husband, said the lady: I am not married, I promise you, my dear. You know, Bell, I have tried the comforts once already; and once, I think, is enough for any rea-

fonable woman.'

This letter Lady Bellaston thought would certainly turn the balance against Jones in the mind of Sophia; and she was emboldened to give it up, partly by her hopes or having him instantly dispatched out of the way, and partly by having secured the evidence of Honour; who, upon sounding her, she saw sufficient reason to imagine, was prepared to testify whatever she pleased.

But perhaps the reader may wonder why Lady Bellaston, who in her heart hated Sophia, should be so des fircus of promoting a match, which was fo much to the interest of the young lady. Now, I should defire such reader to look carefully into human nature, page almost the laft, and there he will find, in scarce legible characters, that women, notwithstanding the preposterous behaviour of mothers, aunts, &c. in matrimonial matters, do in reality think it fo great a misfortune to have their inclinations in love thwarted, that they imagine they ought never to carry enmity higher than upon these difappointments: again, he will find it written, much about the same place, that a woman who hath once been pleased with the possession of a man, will go above half way to the devil, to prevent any other woman from enjoying the fame.

If he will not be contented with these reasons, I freely confess I see no other motive for the actions of that lady, unless we will conceive she was bribed by Lord Fellamar, which for my own part I see no cause to

suspect.

Now, this was the affair which Mrs. Western was preparing to introduce to Sophia, by some presatory discourse on the folly of love, and on the wisdom of legal prostitution for hire, when her brother and Bliss broke abruptly in upon her; and hence arose all that coldness in her behaviour to Bliss; which, though the squire, as was usual with him, imputed to a wrong cause, insufed into Bliss himself (he being a much more cunning man) a suspicion of the real truth.

CHAP. IX.

In which fones pays a Vifit to Mrs. Fitzpatrick.

THE reader may now, perhaps, be pleased to return with us to Mr. Jones; who, at the appointed hour, attended on Mrs. Fitzpatrick. But, before we

relate the conversation which now passed, it may be proper, according to our method, to return a little back, and to account for so great an alteration of behaviour in this lady; that, from changing her lodgings principally to avoid Mr. Jones, she had now industriously, as hath been seen, sought this interview.

And here we shall need only to refort to what happened the preceding day, when hearing from Lady Bellaston, that Mr. Western was arrived in town, she went to pay her duty to him at his lodgings at Piccadilly: where she was received with many scurvy compellations, too coarle to be repeated, and was even threatened to be kicked out of doors. From hence an old fervant of her aunt Western, with whom she was well acquainted, conducted her to the lodgings of that lady, who treated her not more kindly, but more politely; or, to fay the truth, with rudenels in another way. In short, she returned from both, plainly convinced, not only that her scheme of reconciliation had proved abortive, but that the must for ever give over all thoughts of bringing it about by any means whatever. From this moment, defire of revenge only filled her mind; and in this temper meeting Jones at the play, an opportunity feemed to her to occur of effecting the purpofe.

The reader must remember that he was acquainted by Mrs. Fitzpatrick, in the account she gave of her own story, with the fondness Mrs. Western had formerly shewn for Mr. Fitzpatrick at Bath; from the disappointment of which, Mrs. Fitzpatrick derived the great bitterness her aunt had expressed towards her. She had, therefore, no doubt, but that the good lady would as easily listen to the addresses of Mr. Jones, as she had done to the other; for the superiority of charms was clearly on the side of Mr. Jones; and the advance which her aunt had since made in age, she concluded (how justly I will not say) was an argument rather in favour

of her project than against it.

Therefore, when Jones attended, after a previous declaration of her desire of serving him, arising, as she

faid, from a firm affurance how much she should, by so doing, oblige Sophia; and after some excuses for her former disappointment, and after acquainting Mr. Jones in whose custody his mistress was, of which she thought him ignorant; she very explicitly mentioned her scheme to him, and advised him to make sham address to the older lady, in order to produce an easy access to the younger; informing him, at the same time, of the success which Mr. Fitzpatrick had formerly owed to the very same stratagem.

Mr. Jones expressed great gratitude to the lady for the kind intentions towards him which she had expressed, and, indeed, testified, by this proposal; but, besides intimating some dissidence of success from the lady's knowledge of his love to her niece, which had not been her case in regard to Mr. Fitzpatrick, he said, he was asraid Miss Western would never agree to an imposition of this kind, as well from her utter detestation of all sallacy, as from her avowed duty to her

aunt.

Mrs. Fitzpatrick was a little nettled at this; and, indeed, if it may not be called a lapse of the tongue, it was a small deviation from politeness in Jones; and into which he scarce would have fallen, had not the delight he felt in praising Sophia, hurried him out of all reflection; for this commendation of one cousin was more than a tacit rebuke on the other.

'Indeed, Sir, answered the lady, with some warmth, I cannot think there is any thing easier than to cheat an old woman with a profession of love, when her complexion is amorous; and though she is my aunt, I must say, there never was a more liquorish one than her ladyship.—Can't you pretend that the despair of possessing her niece, from her being promised to Bliss, has made you turn your thoughts towards her? As to my cousin Sophia, I can't imagine her to be such a simpleton, as to have the least scruple on such an account; or to conceive any harm in punishing one of these hags for the many mischiefs they bring upon families by their tragic-

comic passions; for which I think it is pity they are not punishable by law. I had no such scruple myself; and yet I hope my cousin Sophia will not think it an affront when I say she cannot detest every real species of falshood more than her cousin Fitzpatrick. To my aunt, indeed, I pretend no duty: nor doth she deserve any. However, Sir, I have given you my advice, and if you decline pursuing it, I shall have the less opinion of your under-

ftanding-that's all.'

Jones now clearly saw the error he had committed, and exerted his utmost power to rectify it: but he only faultered and fluttered into nonsense and contradiction. To say the truth, it is often safer to abide by the consequences of the first blunder, than to endeavour to rectify it; for by such endeavours, we generally plunge deeper, instead of extricating ourselves; and sew persons will, on such occasions, have the good-nature which Mrs. Fitzpatrick displayed to Jones, by saying with a smile—'You need attempt no more excuses; for I can easily forgive a real lover whatever is the effect of fondness for his mistress.'

She then renewed her proposal, and very fervently recommended it; omitting no argument which her invention could suggest on the subject; for she was so violently incented against her aunt, that scarce any thing was capable of affording her equal pleasure with exposing her; and, like a true woman, she would see no diffi-

culties in the execution of a favourite scheme.

Jones, however, perfifted in declining the undertaking; which had not, indeed, the least probability of success. He easily perceived the motives which induced Mrs. Fitzpatrick to be so eager in pressing her advice. He said, he would not deny the tender and passionate regard he had for Sophia; but was so conscious of the inequality of their situations, that he could never flatter himself so far, as to hope that so divine a young lady would condescend to think on so unworthy a man; nay, he protested, he could scarce bring himself to wish she should. He concluded with a profession of generous

fentiments, which we have not at present leisure to insert.

There are some fine women (for I dare not here speak in too general terms) with whom self is so predominant, that they never detach it from any subject; and, as vanity is with them a ruling principle, they are apt to lay hold of whatever praise they meet with; and, though the property of others, convey it to their own use. In the company of these ladies it is impossible to say any thing handsome of another woman, which they will not apply to themselves; nay, they often improve the praise they seize; as for instance—if her beauty, her wit, her gentility, her good-humour, deserve so much commendation, what do I deserve, who posses those qualities in so much more eminent a degree?

To these ladies, a man often recommends himself, while he is recommending another woman; and while he is expressing ardour and generous sentiments for his mistress, they are considering what a charming lover this man would make to them, who can feel all this tenderness for an inferior degree of merit. Of this, strange as it may seem, I have seen many instances besides Mrs. Fitzpatrick, to whom all this really happened, and who now began to feel a somewhat for Mr. Jones, the symptoms of which she much sooner understood than poor So-

To say the truth, perfect beauty, in both sexes, is a more irrissible object than it is generally thought; for, notwithstanding some of us are contented with more homely lots, and learn by rote (as children are to repeat what gives them no idea) to despise outside, and to value more solid charms, yet, I have always observed, at the approach of consummate beauty, that these more solid charms only shine with that kind of lustre which the stars have after the rising of the sun.

phia had formerly done.

When Jones had finished his exclamations, many of which would have become the mouth of Oroondates himfelf, Mrs. Fitzpatrick heaved a deep figh; and taking her eyes off from Jones, on whom they had been some

time fixed, and dropping them on the ground, she cried—'Indeed, Mr. Jones, I pity you; but it is the curse of such tenderness, to be thrown away on those who are insensible of it. I know my cousin better than you, Mr. Jones; and I must say, any woman who makes no return to such a passion, and such a person, is unworthy of both.'

'Sure, Madam, faid Jones, you can't mean—'—
'Mean! cries Mrs. Fitzpatrick; I know not what I mean: there is fomething, I think, in true tenderness, bewitching: few women ever meet with it in men, and fewer still know how to value it when they do. I never heard such truly noble sentiments; and I can't tell how it is, but you force one to believe you. Sure she must be the most contemptible of women, who can overlook such merit.'

The manner and look with which all this was spoke insused a suspicion into Jones, which we don't care to convey into direct words to the reader. Instead of making any answer, he said—'I am asraid, Madam, I have made too tiresome a visit;' and offered to take his leave.

Not at all, Sir, answered Mrs. Fitzpatrick. Indeed, I pity you, Mr. Jones? indeed, I do; but if you are going, consider of the scheme I have mentioned. I am convinced you will approve it, and let me see you again as soon as you can. To-morrow morning, if you will, or at least some time to-morrow. I shall be at home all day.

Jones then, after many expressions of thanks, very respectfully retired; nor could Mrs. Fitzpatrick forbear making him a present of a look at parting, by which, if he had understood nothing, he must have had no understanding in the language of the eyes. In reality, it confirmed his resolution of returning to her no more; for, faulty as he hath hitherto appeared in this history, his whole thoughts were now so confined to his Sophia, that I believe no woman upon earth could have now drawn in into an ast of inconstancy.

Fortune, however, who was not his friend, resolved, as he intended to give her no second opportunity, to make the best of this; and accordingly produced the tragical incident which we are now in sorrowful notes to record.

CHAP. X.

The Consequence of the preceding Visit.

MR. Fitzpatrick having received the letter before mentioned, from Mrs. Western, and being by that means acquainted with the place to which his wife was retired, returned directly to Bath, and thence, the

day after, fet forward to London.

The reader hath been already often informed of the jealous temper of this gentleman. He may likewise be pleased to remember the suspicion which he had conceived of Jones at Upton, upon his finding him in the room with Mrs. Waters; and though sufficient reasons had afterwards appeared entirely to clear up that suspicion, yet, now the reading so handsome a character of Mr. Jones, from his wife, caused him to reslect, that the likewise was in the inn at the same time; and jumbled together such a confusion of circumstances, in a head which was naturally none of the clearest, that the whole produced that green-eyed monster, mentioned by Shakspeare in his tragedy of Othello.

And now, as he was inquiring in the street after his wife, and had just received directions to the door, unfor-

tunately Mr. Jones was issuing from it.

Fitzpatrick did not yet recollect the face of Jones: however, seeing a young well-dressed sellow coming from his wife, he made directly up to him, and asked him what he had been doing in that house: 'For I am sure, said he, you must have been in it, as I saw you come out of it.'

Jones answered very modestly, that he had been vifiting a lady there. To which Fitzpatrick replied, What business have you with the lady?' Upon which Jones, who now perfectly remembered the voice, features, and, indeed, coat of the gentleman, cried outHa! my good friend; give me your hand: I hope there is no ill-blood remaining between us, upon a small mis-

take which happened so long ago.'

'Upon my foul, Sir, said Fitzpatrick, I don't know your name, nor your face.'—'Indeed, Sir, said Jones, neither have I the pleasure of knowing your name; but your face I very well remember to have seen before, at Upton, where a foolish quarrel happened between us, which, if it is not made up yet, we will now make up over a bottle.'

'At Upton! cried the other. Ha! upon my soul, I believe your name is Jones.'—' Indeed, answered, he, it is.'—' O, upon my soul, cries Fitzpatrick, you are the very man I wanted to meet. Upon my soul, I will drink a bottle with you presently; but first I will give you a great knock over the pate. There's for you, you rascal. Upon my soul, if you do not give me satisfaction for that blow, I will give you another.' And then drawing his sword, he put himself in a posture of desence, which was the only science he understood.

Jones was a little staggered by the blow, which came somewhat unexpectedly; but presently recovering himself, he also drew, and though he understood nothing of sencing, pressed on so boldly upon Fitzpatrick, that he beat down his guard, and sheathed one half of his sword in the body of the said gentleman, who had no sooner received it, than he stepped backwards, dropt the point of his sword, and leaning upon it, cried—' I have satisfaction enough: I am a dead man!'

'I hope not, cries Jones: but whatever be the confequence, you must be sensible you have drawn it upon yourself.' At this instant a number of sellows rushed in, and seized Jones; who told them he should make no resistance, and begged some of them at least would take care of the wounded gentleman.

'Aye, cries one of the fellows, the wounded gentleman will be taken care enough of; for, I suppose, he

VOL. III.

hath not many hours to live. As for you, Sir, you have a month at least good yet.'—'D—n me, Jack, faid another, he hath prevented his voyage; he's bound to another port now!' and many other such jests was our poor Jones made the subject of by these fellows, who were, indeed, the gang employed by Lord Fellamar, and had dogged him into the house of Mrs. Fitzpatrick, waiting for him at the corner of the street, when this unfortunate accident happened.

The officer who commanded this gang, very wifely concluded, that his business was now to deliver his prisoner into the hands of the civil Magistrate. He ordered him, therefore, to be carried to a public-house, where, having sent for a constable, he delivered him to his

custody.

The constable seeing Mr. Jones very well dressed, and hearing that the accident had happened in a duel, treated his prisoner with great civility; and, at his request, dispatched a messenger to inquire after the wounded gentleman, who was now at a tavern, under the surgeon's hands. The report brought back was, that the wound was certainly mortal, and there were no hopes of life. Upon which the constable informed Jones, that he must go before a justice. He answered—'Wherever you please: I am indifferent as to what happens to me; for, though I am convinced I am not guilty of murder in the eye of the law, yet, the weight of blood I find intolerable upon my mind.'

Jones was now conducted before the justice, where the surgeon who dressed Mr. Fitzpatrick appeared, and deposed, that he believed the wound to be mortal; upon which the prisoner was committed to the Gate-house. It was very late at night, so that Jones would not send for Partridge till the next morning; and as he never shut his eyes till seven, so it was near twelve before the poor fellow who was greatly frightened at not hearing from his master so long, received a message which almost deprived

him of his being, when he heard it.

He went to the Gate-house, with trembling knees and

a beating heart; and was no sooner arrived in the presence of Jones, than he lamented the missortune that had befallen him, with many tears, looking all the while frequently about him in great terror; for as the news now arrived that Mr. Fitzpatrick was dead, the poor fellow apprehended every minute that his ghost would enter the room. At last he delivered him a letter, which he had like to have forgot, and which came from Sophia by the hands of Black George.

Jones presently dispatched every one out of the room, and having eagerly broke open the letter, read as fol-

lows :-

'You owe the hearing from me again to an accident, which I own furtrised me. My aunt bath just now shewn me a letter from you to Lady Bellaston, which contains a proposal of marriage. I am convinced it is your own hand; and what more surprises me, is, that it is dated at the very time when you would have me imagine you was under such concern on my account. I leave you to comment on this fact. All I desire is, that your name may never more be mentioned to

Of the present situation of Mr. Jones's mind, and of the pangs with which he was now tormented, we cannot give the reader a better idea than by saying, his misery was such, that even Thwackum would almost have pitied him: but, bad as it is, we shall at present leave him in it, as his good genius (if he really had any) seems to have done. And here we put an end to the sixteenth book of our history.

BOOK XVII.

Containing Three Days.

CHAP. I.

Containing a Portion of introductory Writing.

WHEN a comic writer hath made his principal characters as happy as he can, or when a tragic writer hath brought them to the highest pitch of human misery, they both conclude their business to be done, and their work is come to a period.

Had we been of the tragic complexion, the reader

must allow we were now very nearly arrived at this period; since it would be difficult for the devil, or any of his representatives on earth, to have contrived much greater torments for poor Jones, than those in which we lest him in the last chapter: and, as for Sophia, a goodnatured woman would hardly wish more uneafiness to a rival, than what she must at present be supposed to feel. What then remains to compleat the tragedy, but a mur-

der or two, and a few moral fentences?"

But to bring our favourites out of their present anguish and distress, and to land them at last on the short of happiness, seems a much harder task; a task, indeed, so hard, that we do not undertake to execute it. In regard to Sophia, it is more than probable, that we shall, somewhere or other, provide a good husband for her in the end; either Biss, or my lord, or somebody else: but as to poor Jones, such are the calamities in which he is at present involved, owing to his imprudence, by which, if a man doth not become a telon to the world, he is at least a felo de se; so destitute is he now of friends, and so persecuted by enemies, that we almost despair of bringing him to any good; and if our reader delights in seeing executions, I think he ought not to lose any time in taking a first row at Tyburn.

This I faithfully promife, that, notwithstanding any affection which we may be supposed to have for this rogue, whom we unfortunately made our hero, we will lend him none of that supernatural affistance with which we are entrusted, upon condition that we use it only on very important occasions. If he doth not, therefore, find some natural means of fairly extricating himself from all his distresses, we will do no violence to the truth and dignity of history for his sake; for we had rather relate that he was hanged at Tyburn, (which may very probably be the case,) than forseit our integrity, or shock the

faith of one reader.

In this the ancients had a great advantage over the moderns. Their mythology, which was at that time more firmly believed by the vulgar than any religion is

at present, gave them always an opportunity of delivering a favourite hero. Their duties were always ready at the writer's elbow, to execute any of his purposes; and the more extraordinary the invention was, the greater was the surprise and delight of the credulous reader. Those writers could, with greater ease, have conveyed a friend from one country to another, nay, from one world to another, and have brought him back again, than a poor circumscribed modern can deliver him from a gaol.

The Arabians and Persians had an equal advantage in writing their tales from the Genii and Fairies, which they believe in as an article of their faith, upon the authority of the Koran itself. But we have none of these helps. To natural means alone we are confined: let us try, therefore, what by these means may be done for poor Jones: though to confess the truth, something whispers me in the ear, that he doth not yet know the worst of his fortune; and that a more shocking piece of news than any he hath yet heard remains for him in the unopened leaves of fate.

CHAP. II.

MR. Allworthy and Mrs. Miller were just fat down to breakfast, when Bliss who had gone out very early that morning, returned to make one of the com-

pany.

He had not been long seated, before he began as follows: 'Good Lord! my dear uncle, what do you think hath happened? I vow I am afraid of telling it you, for fear of shocking you with the remembrance of ever having shewn any kindness to such a villain.'—'What is the matter, child? said the uncle: I fear I have shewn kindness in my life to the unworthy more than once. But charity doth not adopt the vices of its objects.'—'O! Sir, returned Bliss, it is not without the secret direction of Providence that you mention the word adoption. Your adopted son, Sir, that Jones, that wretch whom you nourished in your bosom, hath proved one of the

greatest villains upon earth.'- By all that's facred, 'tis false! cries Mrs. Miller. Mr. Jones is no villain. He is one of the worthieft creatures breathing; and if any other person had called him villain, I would have thrown all this boiling water in his face.' Mr. Allworthy looked very much amazed at this behaviour. But the did not give him leave to fpeak; before turning to him, the cried, 'I hope you will not be angry with me; I would not offend you, Sir, for the whole world; but, indeed, I could not bear to hear him called fo.'- I must own, Madain, faid Allworthy, very gravely, I am a little forprised to hear you so warmly defend a fellow you do not know.'- 'O! I do know him, Mr. Allworthy, faid fhe; indeed I do: I should be the most ungrateful of all wretches if I denied it. O, he hath preferved me and my little family: we have all reason to bless him while we live. And I pray Heaven to bless him, and turn the hearts of his malicious enemies. I know, I find, I fee he hath fuch.'- You furprise me, Madam, still more, faid Allworthy; fure you must mean some other. It is impossible you should have any such obligations to the man my nephew mentions.'- 'Too furely, answered the; I have obligations to him of the greatest and tenderest kind. He hath been the preserver of me and mine. Believe me, Sir, he hath been abused, grossly abused to you; I know he hath, or you, whom I know to be all goodness and honour, would not, after the many kind and tender things I have heard you fay of this poor helpless ehild, have so disdainfully called him fellow! Indeed, my best of friends, he deserves a kinder appellation from you, had you heard the good, the kind, the grateful things which I have heard him utter of you. He never mentions your name but with a fort of adoration. In this very room I have feen him on his knees imploring all the bleffings of Heaven upon your head. I do not love that child there better than he loves you.'

'I fee, Sir, now, faid Blifil, with one of those grinning facers with which the devil marks his best beloved, Mrs. Miller really doth know him. I suppose you will

find the is not the only one of your acquaintance to whom he hath exposed you. As for my character, I perceive by some hints she hath thrown out, he hath been very free with it, but I forgive him. And the Lord forgive you, Sir, says Mrs. Miller: we have all

fins enough to stand in need of his forgiveness.

do not take this behaviour of yours to my nephew kindly; and I do affure you, as any reflections which you cast upon him, must come only from that wick edest of men, they would only serve, if that were possible, to heighten my refentment against him; for I must tell you, Mrs. Miller, the young man who now stands before you hath ever been the warmest advocate for the ungrateful wretch whose cause you now espouse. This, I think, when you hear it from my mouth, will make you wonder at so much baseness and ingratitude.

You are deceived, Sir, answered Mrs. Miller: if they were the last words which were to issue from my lips, I would say you were deceived; and I once more repeat it, the Lord forgive those who have deceived you! I do not pretend to say the young man is without saults; but they are the faults of wildness and of youth; faults which he may, nay; I am certain he will, relinquish; and if he should not, they are valid; overbalanced by one of the most humane, tender, honest

hearts, that ever man was bleffed with.

related of you, I should not have believed it.'—'Indeed, Sir, answered she, you will believe every thing I have said, I am sure you will; and when you have heard the story which I shall tell you, (for I will tell you all,) you will be so far from being offended, that you will own (I know your justice so well) that I must have been the most despicable and most ungrateful of wretches, if I had acted any other part than I have.'

Well, Madam, faid Allworthy, I shall be very glad to hear any good excuse for a behaviour which, I must confess, I think wants an excuse. And now, Ma-

dam, will you be pleased to let my nephew proceed in his story without interruption? He would not have introduced a matter of slight consequence with such a preface. Perhaps, even this story will cure you of

your mistake.'

Mrs. Miller gave tokens of submission, and then Mr. Blisil began thus—' I am sure, Sir, if you don't think proper to resent the ill usage of Mrs. Miller, I shall easily forgive what affects me only. I think your goodness hath not deserved this indignity at her hands.'—' Well, child, said Allworthy, but what is this new instance? What hath he done of late?'—' What, cries Blisil, notwithstanding all Mrs. Miller hath said, I am very sorry to relate, and what you should never have heard from me, had it not been a matter impossible to conceal from the whole world. In short, he hath killed a man: I will not say murdered—for, perhaps, it may not be so construed in law, and I hope the best for his sake.'

Allworthy looked shocked, and blessed himself; and then turning to Mrs. Miller, he cried, 'Well, Madam,

what fay you now!"

Why, I say, Sir, answered she, that I never was more concerned at any thing in my life; but, if the fact be true, I am convinced the man, whoever he is, was in fault. Heaven knows there are many villains in this town, who make it their business to provoke young gentlemen. Nothing but the greatest provocation could have tempted him; for, of all the gentlemen I ever had in my house, I never saw one so gentle, or so sweet tempered. He was beloved by every one in the house, and every one who came near it.

While the was thus running on, a violent knocking at the door interrupted the conversation, and prevented her from proceeding farther, or from receiving any answer: for as the concluded this was a visitor to Mr. Allworthy, the hastily retired, taking with her her little girl, whose eyes were drowned in tears at the melancholy news she heard of Jones, who used to call her his

little wife, and not only gave her many play-things, but

spent whole hours in playing with her himself.

Some readers may perhaps be pleased with these minute circumstances, in relating of which we follow the example of Plutarch, one of the best of our brother historians; and others, to whom they may appear trivial, will, we hope, at least pardon them, as we are never prolix on such occasions.

CHAP. III.

The arrival of Mr. Western, with some Matters concern-

ing the paternal Authority.

RS. Miller had not long left the room, when Mr. Western entered; but not before a small wrangling bout had passed between him and his chairmen; for the fellows, who had taken up their burden at the Hercules Pillars, had conceived no hopes of having any future good customer in the squire; and they were moreover farther encouraged by his generofity, (for he had given them, of his own accord, fixpence more than their fare) they therefore very boldly demanded another shilling, which so provoked the squire, that he not only bestowed many hearty curies on them at the door, but retained his anger after he came into the room; swearing that all the Londoners were like the court, and thought of nothing but plundering country gentlemen. D-n me, lays he, if I won't walk in the rain rather than get into one of their handbarrows again. They have jolted me more in a mile than Brown Beis would in a long foxchafe.'

When his wrath on this occasion was a little appealed, he refumed the same passionate tone on another. There, says he, there is fine business forwards now. The hounds have changed at last, and when we imagined we had a fox to deal with, ad rat-it, it turns out

to be a badger at laft."

'Pray, my goed neighbour, said Allworthy, drop your metaphors, and speak a little plainer.'—'Why then, says the squire, to tell you plainty, we have been all the time asraid of a son of a whore of a bastard of

fomebody's I don't know who's, not I—and now here is a confounded son of a whore of a lord, who may be a bastard too for what I know or care, for he shall never have a daughter of mine by my consent. They have beggared the nation; but they shall never beggar me. My land shall never be sent over to Hanover.'

' You surprise me much, my good friend,' faid Allworthy. 'Why, zounds! I am furprifed myfelf, answered the squire. I went to fee fifter Western last night, according to her own appointment, and there I was had into a whole roomful of women. There was my Lady Coufin Bellaston, and my Lady Betty, and my Lady Carharine, and my lady I don't know who; d-n me if ever you catch me among fuch a kennel of hoop petticoat b-s; D-n me, I'd rather be run by my own dogs, as one Acton was; that the story-book fays, was turned into a hare, and his own dogs killed un, and eat un! Od-rabbit it, no mortal was ever run in fuch a manner; if I dodged one way, one had me; if I offered to clap back, another fnapped me. "O, certainly, one of the greatest matches in England!" fays one cousin. [Here he attemted to mimic them.] "A very advantageous offer indeed!" cries another coufin; (for you must know they be all my cousins, thof I never zeed half o um before.) "Surely, fays that fat a-le b --- , my Lady Bellatton, coufin, you must be out of your wits, to think of refusing such an offer!"

Now I begin to understand, says Allworthy, some person hath made proposals to Miss Western, which the ladies of the family approve, but it is not to

your likeing.'

'My likeing! said Western; how the devil should it? I tell you it is a lord; and those are alway volks whom you know I always resolved to have nothing to do with. Did unt I refuse a matter of vorty years purchase now for a bit of land, which one o'um had a mind to put into a park, only because I would have no dealings with lords; and dost think I would marry my

daughter zu? Besides, ben't I engaged to you, and did

I ever go off my bargain when I had promited?"

As to that point, neighbour, said Allworthy, I entirely released you from any engagement. No contract can be binding between parties who have not a full power to make it at the time, nor ever afterwards acquire the power of fulfilling it.'

power, and I will fulfil it. Come along with me directly to Doctors Commons; I will get a licence, and will go to fifter, and take away the wench by force; and fhe shall ha'un, or I will lock her up, and keep her upon

bread and water as long as she lives.'

" Mr. Western, said Allworthy, shall I beg you will hear my full fentiments on this matter?'- ' Hear thee! aye, to be fure, I will, answered he.'- Why then, Sir, cries Allworthy, I can truly fay, without a compliment either to you or the young lady, that when this match was proposed, I embraced it very readily and heartily, from my regard to you both. An alliance between two families so nearly neighbours, and between whom there had always existed so mutual an intercourse and good harmony, I thought a most desirable event; and with regard to the young lady, not only the concurrent opinion of all who knew her, but my own observation affured me, that fhe would be an inestimable treasure to a good husband. I shall say nothing of her personal qualifications, which certainly are admirable: her good nature, her charitable disposition, her modesty, are too well known to need any panegyric: but she hath one quality which existed in a high degree in that best of women, who is now one of the first of angels, which, as it is not of a glaring kind, more commonly escapes observation; so little, indeed, it is remarked, that I want a word to express it. I must use negatives on this occasion. I never heard any thing of pertness, or what is called repartee, out of her mouth; no pretence to wit, much less to that kind of wildom, which is the result only of great learning and experience; the affectation of which, in a young woman,

is as abfurd as any of the affectations of an ape. No dictatorial fentiments, no judicial opinions, no profound criticisms. Whenever I have seen her in the company of men, the hath been all attention, with the modelty of a learner, not the forwardness of a teacher. You'll pardon me for it, but I once, to try her only, defired her opinion on a point which was controverted between Mr. Thwackum and Mr. Square. To which the answered, with much sweetness-" You will pardon me, good Mr. Allworthy; I am fure you cannot in earnest think me capable of deciding any point in which two fuch gentlemen difagree."- Thwackum and Square, who both alike thought themselves sure of a favourable decision, seconded my request. She answered with the same good humour-" I must absolutely be excused; for I will affront neither so much, as to give my judgment on his fide."-Indeed, the always thewed the highest deference to the understandings of men! a quality absolutely essential to the making a good wife. I shall only add, that as she is most apparently void of all affectation, this diffidence must be certainly real.'

Here Blifil sighed bitterly; upon which Western, whose eyes were full of tears at the praise of Sophia, blubbered out—' Don't be chichen-hearted, for shat ha' hur; d—n me, shat ha' hur, if she was twenty times

as good.

Remember your promise, Sir, cried Allworthy; I was not to be interrupted. Well, shat unt answered

the fquire, I won't speak another word.

Now, my good friend, continued Allworthy, I have dwelt to long on the merit of this young lady, partly as I really am in love with her character, and partly that fortune (for the match in that light is really advantageous on my nephew's fide) might not be imagined to be my principle view in having to eagerly embraced the proposal. Indeed, I heartily wished to receive so great a jewel into my family; but though I may wish for many good things, I would not, therefore, steal them, or be guilty of any violence or injustice to posses myself of

them. Now, to force a woman into a marriage contrary to her consent or approbation, is an act of such injustice and oppression, that I wish the laws of our country could restrain it; but a good conscience is never lawlets in the worst regulated state, and will provide those laws for itself, which the neglect of legislators hath forgotten to supply. This is surely a case of that kind; for is it not cruel, nay impious, to force a woman into that state against her will, for her behaviour in which she is to be accountable to the highest and most dreadful court of judicature, and to answer at the peril of her foul! To discharge the matrimonial duties in an adequate manner, is no easy task; and shall we lay this burden upon a woman, while we at the same time deprive her of all that affiftance which may enable her to undergo it? Shall we tear her very heart from her, while we enjoin her duties to which a whole heart is scarce equal? I must speak very plainly here; I think parents who act in this manner are accessaries to all the guilt which their children afterwards incur; and of course must, before a just Judge, expect to partake of their punishment; but if they could avoid this, good Heaven! is there a foul who can bear the thought of having contributed to the damnation of his child?

For these reasons, my best neighbour, as I see the inclinations of this young lady are most unhappily averse to my nephew, I must decline any farther thoughts of the honour you intended him, though I assure you, I shall

always retain the most grateful sense of it.'

Well, Sir, said Western, (the froth bursting forth from his lips the moment they were uncorked) you cannot say but I have heard you out, and now I expect you'll hear me; and if I don't answer every word on't, why then I'll content to gee the matter up. First, then, I desire you to answer me one question, Did not I beget her? Did not I beget her? answer me that. They say, indeed, it is a wife father that knows his own child; but I am sure I have the best tit e to her, for I bred her up. But I believe you will allow me to be her father; You. III.

and if I be, am I not to govern my own child? And if I am to govern her in other matters, furely I am to govern her in this which concerns her most. And what am I defiring all this while? Am I defiring her to do any thing for me? To give me any thing? Zu much on t'other fide, that I am only defiring her to take away half my estate now, and t'other half when I die. Well; and what is it all yor? Why is unt it to make her happy? It's enough to make one mad to hear volks talk. If I was going to marry myself, then she would ha' reafon to cry and to blubber; but, on the contrary, han't I offered to bind down my land in fuch a manner, that I could not marry if I would, zeeing as narro' woman upon earth would ha' me. What the devil in hell can I do more? I contribute to her damnation-Zounds! I'd see all the world d-d before her little finger should be hurt. Indeed Mr. Allworthy, you must excuse me, but I am surprised to hear you talk in such a manner: and I must say, take it how you will, that I thought you had more sense.'

Allworthy refented this reflection only with a smile; nor could he, if he would have endeavoured it, have conveyed into that smile any mixture of malice or contempt. His smiles at folly were, indeed, such as we may suppose the angels bestow on the absurdities of man-

kind.

Blifil now defired to be permitted to speak a few words. 'As to using any violence on the young lady, I am sure I shall never consent to it. My conscience will not permit me to use violence on any one, much less on a lady, for whom, however cruel she is to me, I shall always preserve the purest and sincerest affection; but yet I have read, that women are seldom proof against perseverance. Why may I not hope, then, by such perseverance, at last to gain those inclinations, in which, for the future, I shall, perhaps, have no rival; for, as for this lord, Mr. Western is so kind to preser me to him; and sure, Sir, you will not deny but that a parent has at least a negative voice in these matters: nay, I have

heard this very young lady herself say so, more than once; and declare, that she thought children inexcusable who married in direct opposition to the will of their parents. Besides, though the other ladies of the family seem to favour the pretensions of my lord, I do not find the lady herself is inclined to give him any countenance; alas! I am too well assured she is not; I am too sentiable that wickedest of men remains uppermost in her heart.

' Ay, ay, io he does,' cries Western.

But furely, fays Blifil, when she bears of this murder which he hath committed, if the law should spare his life—'

'What's that? cries Western, murder! hath he committed a murder, and is their any hopes of seeing him hanged?—Tol de rol, tol lol de rol. Here he fell a singing and capering about the room.

'Child, says Allworthy, this unhappy passion of yours distresses me beyond measure. I heartily pity you, and would do every fair thing to promote your

fuccefs. The true no fonto report and

dear uncle hath a better opinion of me than to think that I myself would accept of more.

'Look'ee, said Allworthy, you have my leave to write, to visit, if she will permit it—but I insist on no thoughts of violence. I will have no confinement, nothing of that

kind attempted ho so to to was ander of

Well, well, cries the squire, nothing of that kind shall be attempted; we will try a little longer what fair means will effect; and if this fellow be but hanged out of the way—Tol lol de rol. I never heard better news in my life; I warrant every thing goes to my mind. Do, prithee, dear Allworthy, come and dine with me at the Hercules Pillars: I have bespoke a shoulder of mutton roasted, and a spare-rib of pork, and a sowl and egg-sauce. There will be nobody but ourselves, unless we have a mind to have the landlord; for I have sent Parson Supple down to Basingstoke, after my tobacco-box,

5 2

which I left at an inn there, and I would not lose it for the world: for it is an old acquaintance of above twenty years standing. I can tell you, landlord is a vast comical bitch; you will like un hugely.'

Mr. Allworthy at last agreed to this invitation, and foon after the squire went off, singing and capering at the hopes of seeing the speedy tragical end of poor

Tones.

When he was gone, Mr. Allworthy refumed the aforefaid subject with much gravity. He told his nephew he wished with all his heart he would endeavour to conquer a passion, in which I cannot, says he, flatter you with any hopes of succeeding. It is certainly a vulgar error, that aversion in a woman may be conquered by perseverance. Indifference may, perhaps, sometimes yield to it; but the usual triumphs gained by perseverance in a lover are over caprice, prudence, affectation, and often an exorbitant degree of levity, which excites women, not over-warm in their constitutions, to indulge their vanity by prolonging the time of courtship, even when they are well enough pleased with the object, and resolve (if they ever resolve at all) to make him a pitiful amends in the end. But a fixed dislike, as I am afraid this is, will rather gather strength than be conquered by time. Besides, my dear, I have another apprehension which you must excuse. I am afraid this passion which you have for this fine young creature, hath her beautiful person too much for its object, and is unworthy of the name of that love, which is the only fonndation of matrimonial felicity. To admire, to like, and to long for the possession of a beautiful woman, without any regard to her fentiments towards us, is, I am afraid, too natural. But love, I believe, is the child of love only; at least, I am pretty confident, that to love the creature who we are affured hates us is not in human nature. Examine your heart, therefore, thoroughly, my good boy, and if, upon examination, you have but the least suspicion of this kind, I am sure your own virtue and religion will impel you to drive so vicious a passion

from your heart, and your good fense will soon enable

you to do it without pain.'

The reader may pretty well guess Blissl's answer; but if he should be at a loss, we are not, at present, at leisure to satisfy him, as our history now hastens on to matters of higher importance, and we can no longer bear to be absent from Sophia.

CHAP. IV.

An extraordinary Scene between Sophia and her Aunt.

THE lowing heifer, and the bleating ewe, in herds and flocks, may ramble fafe and unregarded through the pastures. These are, indeed, hereatter doomed to be the prey of man; yet many years are they suffered to enjoy their liberty undisturbed. But if a plump doe be discovered to have escaped from the forest, and to repose herself in some field or grove, the whole parish is presently alarmed; every man is ready to set his dogs after her; and if she is preserved from the rest by the good squire, it is only that he may secure her for his own eating

I have often confidered a very fine young woman of fortune and fashion, when first found strayed from the pale of her nursery, to be in pretty much the same situ-

pale of her nursery, to be in pretty much the same situation with this doe. The town is immediately in an uproar; she is hunted from park to play, from court to assembly, from assembly to her own chamber, and rarely escapes a single season from the jaws of some devourer or other; for if her friends protect her from some, it is only to deliver her over to one of their own chusing, often more disagreeable to her than any of the rest; while whole herds or slocks of other women, securely, and scarce regarded, traverse the park, the play, the opera, and the assembly; and though, for the most part at least, they are at last devoured, yet for a long time do they wanton in liberty, without desturbance or control.

Of all these paragons, none ever tasted more of this persecution than poor Sophia. Her ill stars were not contented with all that she had suffered on account of

210

Blifil, they now raised her another pursuer, who seemed likely to torment her no less than the other had done. For, though her aunt was less violent, she was no less assiduous in teazing her, than her farther had been before.

The fervants were no fooner departed after dinner. than Mrs. Western, who had opened the matter to Sophia, informed her, that the expected his lordship that very afternoon, and intended to take the first opportunity of leaving her alone with him. If you do, Madam, answered Sophia, with some spirit, I shall take the first opportunity of leaving him by himself.'- 'How, Madam! cries the aunt, is this the return you make me for my kindness, in relieving you from your confinement at your father's?'- You know, Madam, fays Sophia, the cause of that confinement was a refufal to comply with my father, in accepting a man I detested; and will my dear aunt, who hath relieved me from that diffress, involve me in another equally bad?'-And do you think then, Madam, answered Mrs. Western, that there is no difference between my Lord Fellamar and Mr. Blifil ? Wery little in my opinion, cries Sophia; and if I must be condemned to one, I would certainly have the merit of facrificing myfelf to my farther's pleasure."- Then my pleasure, I find, faid the aunt, hath very little weight with you; but that consideration shall not move me. I act from nobler motives. The view of aggrandizing my family, of ennobling yourself, is what I proceed upon. Have you no sense of ambition? Are there no charms in the thoughts of having a coronet on your coach?'- None, upon my honour, faid Sophia. A pincushion upon my coach would please me fust as well.'- Never mention honour, cries the aunt; it becomes not the mouth of such a wretch. I am forry, niece, you force me to use these words; but I cannot bear your groveling temper; you have none of the blood of the Westerns in you. But however mean and base your own ideas are, you shall bring no imputation on mine. I will never fuffer the

world to fay of me, that I encouraged you in refusing one of the best matches in England; a match, which besides its advantage in fourtune, would do honour to almost any family, and hath, indeed, in title, the advantage of ours.'—' Surely, says Sophia, I am born desicient, and have not the tenses with which other people are blessed: there must be certainly some sense which can relish the delights of sound and shew, which I have not; for surely mankind would not labour so much, nor sacrifice so much for the obtaining, nor would they be so elate and proud with possessing, what appeared to them, as it doth to me, the most insignificant of all trisses.'

No, no, Miss, cries the aunt; you are born with as many fenses as other people; but, I assure you, you are not born with a sufficient understanding to make a fool of me, or to expose my conduct to the world. So I declare this to you upon my word, and you know, I believe, how fixed my resolutions are, unless you agree to fee his lordship this afternoon, I will, with my own hands, deliver you to-morrow morning to my brother, and will never henceforth interfere with you, nor fee your face again.' Sophia Rood a few moments filent after this fpeech, which was uttered in a most angry and peremptory tone; and then burfting into tears, the cried, ' Do with me, Madam, whatever you pleafe. I am the most miserable, undone wretch upon earth; if my dear aunt forfakes me, where shall I look for a protector?'- My dear niece, cries she, you will have a very good protector in his lordship; a protector, whom nothing but a hankering after that vile fellow Jones can make you decline,'- Indeed, Madam, faid Sophia, you wrong me. How can you imagine, after what you have shewn me, if I had ever any such thoughts, that I should not banish them for ever? If it will satisfy you, I will receive the facrament upon it, never to fee his face again.'- But, child, dear child, faid the aunt, be reafonable: can you invent a fingle objection?'- 'I have already, I think, told you a sufficient objection, answer-

ed Sophia.'- What! cries the aunt; I remember none.' Sure, Madam, faid Sophia, I told you he had used me in the rudest and vilest manner.'- Indeed, child, anfwered she, I never heard you, or did not understand you: but what do you mean by this rude and vile manner?'- Indeed, Madam, faid Sophia, I am almost ashamed to tell you. He caught me in his arms, pulled me down upon the fettee, and thrust his hand into my bosom, and kissed it with such violence, that I have the mark upon my left breaft at this moment.'- 'Indeed! faid Mrs. Western.'- Yes, indeed, Madam, answered Sophia. My father luckily came in at that inftant, or Heaven knows what rudeness he intended to have proceeded to.'- I am aftonished and confounded, cries the aunt. No woman of the name of Western hath ever been treated so since we were a family. I would have torn the eyes of a prince out, if he had attempted fuch freedoms with me. It is impossible! Sure, Sophia, you must invent this to raise my indignation against him.'- I hope, Madam, said Sophia, you have too good an opinion of me, to imagine me capable of telling an untruth. Upon my foul it is true.'- I should have flabbed him to the heart, had I been present, returned the aunt. Yet, furely, he could have no dishonourable design: it is impossible! he durst not: besides, his proposals hew he had not; for they are not only honourable, but generous. I don't know; the age allows too great freedoms. A distant salute is all I would have allowed before the ceremony. I have had lovers formerly, not so long ago neither, several lovers, though I never would consent to marriage, and I never encouraged the least freedom. It is a foolish custom, and what I never would agree to. No man kiffed more of me than my cheek. It is as much as one can bring one's felf to give lips up to a husband; and, indeed, could I ever have been persuaded to marry, I believe I should not have soon been brought to endure so much.' 'You will pardon me, dear Madam, faid Sophia, if I make one observation. You own you have had many

lovers, and the world knows it, even if you should deny it. You refused them all, and I am convinced one coronet at least among them.'- You say true, dear Sophy, answered she; I had once the offer of a title.'-Why, then, faid Sophia, will you not suffer me to refule this once?'- 'It is true, child, faid fh , I have refused the offer of a title; but it was not so good an offer; that is, not fo very, very good an offer.'- 'Yes, Madam, faid Sophia; but you have had very great propoials from men of vast fortunes. It was not the first, nor the second, nor the third advantageous match that offered itself.'- I own it was not,' said she. 'Well, Madam, continued Sophia, and why may not I expect to have a second, perhaps, better than this? You are now but a young woman, and I am convinced would not promise to yield to the first lover of fortune, nay, or of title too. I am a very young woman, and fure I need not despair.'- Well, my dear, dear Sophy, cries the aunt, what would you have me fay?'- Why, I only beg, that I may not be left alone, at least this evening: grant me that, and I will fubmit, if you think, after what hath paffed, I ought to fee him in your company.'- Well, I will grant it, cries the aunt. Sophy, you know I love you, and can deny you nothing. You know the eafiness of my nature; I have not always been so easy. I have been formerly thought cruel; by the men, I mean. I was called the cruel Parthenissa. I have broke many a window that has had verses to the crue Parthenissa in it. Sophy, I was never so handsome as you, and yet I had something of you formerly. am a little altered. Kingdoms and States, as Tully Cicero fays in his epittles, undergo alteration, and to must the human form.' Thus ran she on for near half an hour upon herself, and her conquests, and her cruelty, till the arrival of my lord; who, after a most tedi-ous visit, during which Mrs. Western never once offered to leave the room, retired, not much more fatisfied with the aunt than with the niece; for Sophia had brought her aunt into so excellent a temper, that she

consented to almost every thing her niece said; and agreed, that a little distant behaviour might not be im-

proper to fo forward a lover.

Thus Sophia, by a little well-directed flattery, for which furely none will blame her, obtained a little ease for herself, and at least put off the evil-day: and now we have seen our heroine in a better situation than she hath been for a long time before, we will look a little after Mr. Jones, whom we left in the most deplorable situation that can be well imagined.

CHAP. V.

Mrs. Miller and Mr. Nightingale vifit Jones in the Prison.

WHEN Mr. Allworthy and his nephew went to meet Mr. Western, Mrs. Miller set forward to her son-in-law's lodgings, in order to acquaint him with the accident which had befallen his friend Jones; but he had known it long before from Partridge; (for Jones, when he left Mrs. Miller, had been furnished with a room in the same house with Mr. Nightingale.) The good woman found her daughter under great affliction on account of Mr. Jones, whom having comforted as well as the could, she set forward to the gate-house, where she heard he was, and where Mr. Nightingale was arrived before her.

The firmness and constancy of a true friend is a circumstance so extremely delightful to persons in any kind of distress, that the distress itself, if it be only temporary, and admits of relief, is more than compensated by bringing this comfort with it. Nor are instances of this kind so rare as some superficial and inaccurate observers have reported. To say the truth, want of compassion is not to be numbered among our general faults. The black ingredient which souls our disposition is envy. Hence our eye is seldom, I am asraid, turned upwards to those who are manifestly greater, better, wiser, or happier than ourselves, without some degree of malignity; while we commonly look downwards on the mean and miserable with sufficient benevolence and pity. In

fact, I have remarked, that most of the defects which have discovered themselves in the friendships within my observation, have arisen from envy only; a hellish vice; and yet one from which I have known very few absolutely exempt. But enough of a subject which, if pursued, would lead me too far.

Whether it was that Fortune was apprehensive lest Jones should sink under the weight of his adversity, and that she might thus lose any future opportunity of tormenting him, or whether she really abated somewhat of her severity towards him, she seemed a little to relax her persecution, by sending him the company of two such faithful triends, and, what is perhaps more rare, a faithful servant. For Partridge, though he had many impersections, wanted no fidelity; and though fear would not suffer him to be hanged for his master, yet the world, I believe, could not have bribed him to desert his cause.

While Iones was expressing great satisfaction in the presence of his friends, Partridge brought an account, that Mr. Fitzpatrick was still alive, though the surgeon declared that he had very little hopes. Upon which Jones fetching a deep figh, Nightingale said to him, My dear Tom, why should you afflict yourself so upon an accident, which, whatever be the confequence, can be attended with no danger to you, and in which your conscience cannot accuse you of having been in the least to blame. If the fellow should die, what have you done more than taken away the life of a ruffian in your own defence? So will the coroner's inquest certainly find it; and then you will be eafily admitted to bail; and though you must undergo the form of a trial, yet it is a trial which many men would stand for you for a shilling.'- Come, come, Mr. Jones, said Mrs. Miller, cheer yourself up. I knew you could not be the aggressor, and so I told Mr. Allworthy, and so he shall acknowledge too, before I have done with him.'

Jones gravely answered, 'That whatever might be his fate, he should always lament the having shed the blood

of one of his fellow creatures as one of the highest misfertunes which could have befallen him. But I have another misfortune of the tenderest kind. O! Mrs. Miller, I have lost what I held most dear upon earth.' 'That must be a mistress, said Mrs. Miller: but, come, come; I know more than you imagine; (for, indeed, Partridge had blabbed all) and I have heard more than you know. Matters go better, I promise you, than you think; and I would not give Bliss sixpence for all

the chance which he hath of the lady.'

'Indeed, my dear friend, indeed, answered Jones, you are an entire stranger to the cause of my grief. If you was acquainted with the story, you would allow my case admitted of no comfort. I apprehend no danger from Bliss. I have undone myself.'—'Don't despair, replied Mrs. Miller: you know not what a woman can do; and if any thing be in my power, I promise you I will do it to serve you. It is my duty. My son, my dear Mr. Nightingale, who is kind to tell me he hath obligations to you on the same account, knows it is my duty. Shall I go to the lady myself? I will say any thing to her you would have me say.'

'Thou best of women, cries Jones, taking her by the hand, talk not of obligations to me; but, as you have been so kind to mention it, there is a favour which, perhaps, may be in your power. I see you are acquainted with the lady (how you came by your information I know not) who sits, indeed, very near my heart. If you could contrive to deliver this (giving her a paper from his pocket) I shall for ever acknowledge your

goodness.

Give it me, said Mrs. Miller. If I see it not in her own possession before I sleep, may my next sleep be my last. Comfort yourself, my good young man; be wise enough to take warning from past sollies, and I warrant all shall be well, and I shall yet see you happy with the most charming young lady in the world; for so I hear from every one she is.

Believe me, Madam, said he, I do not speak the

common cant of one in my unhappy fituation. Before this dreadful accident happened, I had refolved to quit a life, of which I was become tenfible of the wickedness as well as folly. I do affure you, notwithstanding the disturbances I have unfortunately occasioned in your house, for which I heartily ask your pardon, I am not an abandoned profligate. Though I have been hurried into vices, I do not approve a vicious character; nor will Fever, from this moment, deserve it.

Mrs. Miller expressed great satisfaction in these declarations, in the fincerity of which the averred the had an entire faith; and now the remainder of the conversation paffed in the joint attempts of that good woman and Mr. Nightingale to cheer the dejected spirits of Mr. Jones, in which they so far succeeded, as to leave him much better comforted and fatisfied than they found him: to which happy alteration, nothing so much contributed, as the kind undertaking of Mrs. Miller, to deliver his letter to Sophia, which he despaired of finding any means to accomplish: for when Black George produced the last from Sophia, he informed Partridge, that the had strictly charged him, on pain of having it communicated to her father, not to bring her any anfwer. He was moreover not a little pleased to find he had so warm an advocate to Mr. Ailworthy himself in this good woman, who was, in reality, one of the worthies creatures in the world.

After about an hour's visit from the lady (for Nightingale had been with him much longer) they both took their leave, promising to return to him soon; during which, Mrs. Miller said, she hoped to bring him some good news from his mistress; and Mr. Nightingale promised to enquire into the state of Mr. Fitzpatrick's wound, and likewise to find out some of the persons who

were prefent at the rencounter.

The former of these went directly in quest of Sophia, whither we likewise shall now attend her.

VOL. III.

In which Mrs. Miller pays a wifit to Sophia.

A CCESS to the young lady was by no means difficult; for as she lived now on a perfect friendly footing with her aunt, she was at full liberty to receive what visitants she pleased.

Sophia was dreffing, when she was acquainted that there was a gentlewoman below to wait on her: as she was neither atraid nor ashamed to see any of her own sex,

Mrs. Miller was immediately admitted.

Curties, and the usual ceremonials between women who are strangers to each other, being past, Sophia said, I have not the pleasure to know you, Madam.'—' No, Madam, answered Mrs. Miller, and I must beg pardon for intruding upon you. But when you know what has induced me to give you this trouble, I hope—'—' Pray, what is your business, Madam? said Sophia, with a little emotion.'—' Madam, we are not alone,' replied Mrs. Miller, in a low voice.—' Go out, Betty,' faid Sophia.

When Betty was departed, Mrs. Miller said, I was desired, Madam, by a very unhappy young gentleman, to deliver you this letter.' Sophia changed colour when she saw the direction, well knowing the hand; and, after some hesitation, said, I could not conceive, Madam, from your appearance, that your business had been of such a nature. Whomever you brought this letter from, I shall not open it. I should be forry to entertain an unjust suspicion of any one; but you are an utter stranger to me.'

'If you will have patience, Madam, answered Mrs. Miller, I will acquaint you who I am, and how I came by that letter.'—'I have no curiosity, Madam, to know any thing, cries Sophia: but I must insist on your delivering that letter back to the person who gave it you.'

Mrs. Miller then fell upon her knees, and, in the most passionate terms, implored her compassion: to which Sophia answered, 'Sure, Madam, it is surprising you should be so very strongly interested in the behalf of this

The second and while grow soft of cold Jua cult; for as the lived now on a perior t oug with her aunt, the was at full offered to

with vifitants the pleated.

ophia was dreffing, when the west copies to was a gentlewomen below to wast basher as neither at aid nor aftermed to the any of her ever . Alillet was mimediately admitted

Curifies, and the utuel ceremonials to are firancers to each other, being pells, Suphia !have not the pleafure to know rous Madam -- " adam, only cred Mrs. Milers and I multibeg para netrading upon year. But when you know what a iced me to give you this mubbe, I appear up P. motion. - Maddit wearency alone, righted Mi When Berg was sept and Mile Male land 1 wis Madeau, to West 19 1990 sound grante at the service of the ser are the date than, well buy to the napidy and the is your appearance, the scur budgets and ever der deure. Macener et act brought this ferter au-I not open a distributed for contentations elector et am see a con are en uttet fin.

If you will have lengther Madany as you in sales; I will acquient one who I am, and how I ca that letter . I have no currotity, Madamow and thing rays S parts but I must infit our delivering that better tack to the perfort who g

Mrs. Mains this it is apon her knees, and, in if padionate terms, unplote thei compation; to will one aniwered, "Sure, Madam, it is lurprointo the ded this bottom to region to an object to



person. I would not think, Madam—'—' No Madam, says Mrs. Miller, you shall not think any thing but the truth. I will tell you all, and you will not wonder that I am interested. He is the best-natured creature that ever was born.' She then began and related the story of Mr. Henderson. After this she cried, 'This, Madam, this is his goodness; but I have much more tender obligations to him. He hath preserved my child.' Here, after shedding some tears, she related every thing concerning that fact, suppressing only those circumstances which would have most reslected on her daughter, and concluded with saying, 'Now, Madam, you shall judge whether I can ever do enough for so kind, so good, so generous a young man; and sure he is the best and worthiest of all human beings.'

The alterations in the countenance of Sophia had hitherto been chiefly to her disadvantage, and had inclined her complexion to too great paleness; but she now waxed redder, if possible, than vermillion, and cried, 'I know not what to say; certainly what arises from gratitude cannot be blamed. But what service can my reading this letter do your friend, since I am resolved never—'Mrs. Miller sell again to her entreaties, and begged to be forgivven, but she could not, she said, carry it back.

Well, Madam, says Sophia, I cannot help it, if you will force it upon me. Certainly you may leave it whether I will or no.' What Sophia meant, or whether she meant any thing, I will not presume to determine; but Mrs. Miller actually understood this as a hint, and presently laying the letter down on the table, took her leave, having first begged permission to wait again on Sophia; which request had neither assent nor denial.

The letter lay upon the table no longer than till Mrs. Miller was out of fight; for then Sophia opened and read

it.

This letter did very little service to his cause; for it consisted of little more than confessions of his own unworthiness and bitter lamentations of despair, together with the most solemn protestations of his unalterable fidelity to

T2

Sophia, of which, he said, he hoped to convince her, if he had ever more the honour of being admitted to her presence; and that he could account for the letter to Lady Bellaston in such a manner, that, though it would not entitle him to her forgiveness, he hoped at least to obtain it from her mercy. And concluded with vowing, that nothing was ever less in his thoughts than to marry Lady Bellaston.

Though Sophia read the letter twice over with great attention, his meaning still remained a riddle to her; nor could her invention suggest to her any means to excuse Jones. She certainly remained very angry with him: though, indeed, Lady Bellaston took up so much of her resentment, that her gentle mind had but little left to be-

flow on any other person.

The lady was, most unluckily, to dine this very day with her aunt Western; and in the afternoon, they were all three, by appointment, to go together to the opera, and thence to Lady Thomas Hatchet's drum. Sophia would have gladly been excused from all, but she would not disoblige her aunt: and as to the arts of counterseiting illness, she was so entirely a stranger to them, that it never once entered into her head. When she was dressed, therefore, down she went, resolved to encounter all the horrors of the day; and a most disagreeable one it proved; for Lady Bellaston took every opportunity very civilly and slily to insult her; to all which, her dejection of spirits disabled her from making any return; and, indeed, to consess the truth, she was at the very best but an indifferent mistress of repartee.

Another misfortune which befel poor Sophia was the company of Lord Fellamar, whom she met at the opera, and who attended her to the drum. And though both places were too public to admit of any particularities, and she was farther relieved by the music at the one place, and by the cards at the other, she could not, however, enjoy herself in his company: for there is something of delicacy in women, which will not suffer them to be even easy in the presence of a man whom they know to have

pretentions to them, which they are difinclined to fa-

Having in this chapter twice mentioned a drum, a word, which our posterity, it is hoped, will not understand in the sense it is here applied, we shall, not with standing our present haste, stop a moment to describe the entertainment here meant; and the rather, as we can in a moment describe it.

A drum, then, is an affembly of well-dreffed persons, of both sexes, most of whom play at cards, and the rest do nothing at all; while the mistress of the house performs the part of the landlady at an inn; and, like the landlady of an inn, prides herself in the number of her guests; though she doth not always, like her, get any

thing by it.

No wonder then, as so much spirits must be required to support any vivacity in these scenes of dulness, that we hear persons of fashion eternally complaining of the want of them; a complaint confined entirely to upper life. How insupportable must we imagine this round of impertinence to have been to Sophia at this time! how difficult must she have found it, to force the appearance of gaiety into her looks, when her mind distated nothing but the tenderest forrow, and when every thought was charged with tormenting ideas!

Night, however, at last, restored her to her pillow, where we will leave her to soothe her melancholy, at least, though incapable, we fear, of rest; and shall pursue our history, which, something whispers us, is now arrived

at the eve of some great event.

CHAP. VII.

A pathetic Scene between Mr. Allworthy and Mrs. Miller.

MRS. Miller had a long discourse with Mr. Allworthy, at his return from dinner, in which she acquainted him with Jones's having unfortunately lost all which he was pleased to bestow on him at their separation; and with the distresses to which that loss had subjected him; of all which she had received a full account

T 3

from the faithful retailer, Partridge. She then explained the obligations she had to Jones: not that she was entirely explicit with regard to her daughter; for though she had the utmost considence in Mr. Allworthy, and though there could be no hopes of keeping an affair secret which was unhappily known to more than half a dozen, yet she could not prevail with herself to mention those circumstances which resected most on the chastity of poor Nancy; but smothered that part of her evidence as cautiously as if she had been before a judge, and the girl was now on her trial for the murder of a bastard.

Allworthy said, there were few characters so absolutely vicious as not to have the least mixture of good in them. 'However, says he, I cannot deny but that you had some obligations to the fellow, bad as he is: and I shall therefore excuse what hath passed already, but must insist, you never to mention his name to be more; for I promise you, it was upon the fullest and plainest evidence that I resolved to take the measures I have taken.'—'Well, Sir, says she, I make not the least doubt, but time will shew all matters in their true and natural colours, and that you will be convinced this poor young man deserves better of you than some other folks that shall be nameless.'

'Madam, cries Allworthy, a little ruffled, I will not hear any reflections on my nephew; and if you ever fay a word more of that kind, I will depart from your house that instant. He is the worthiest and best of men: and I once more repeat it to you, he hath carried his friendship to this man to a blameable length, by too long concealing facts of the blackest dye. The ingratitude of the wretch to this good young man is what I most resent: for, Madam, I have the greatest reason to imagine he had laid a plot to supplant my nephew in my favour, and to have disinherited him.'

'I am sure, Sir, answered Mrs. Miller, a little frightened, (for though Mr. Allworthy had the utmost sweetness and benevolence in his smiles, he had great terror

in his frowns,) 'I shall never speak against any gentleman you are pleased to think well of. I am sure, Sir, fuch behaviour would very ill become me, especially when the gentleman is your nearest relation; but, Sir, you must not be angry with me, you must not indeed, for my good wishes to this poor wretch. Sure I may call him fo now; though once you would have been angry with me, if I had spoke of him with the least disrespect. How often have I heard you call him your fon? How often have you prattled to me of him, with all the fondness of a parent? Nay, Sir, I cannot fogret the many tender expressions, the many good things you have told me of his beauty, and his parts, and his virtues; of his good-nature and generofity. I am fure, Sir, I cannot forget them; for I find them all true; I have experienced them in my own cause. They have preserved my family. You must pardon my tears, Sir; indeed you must, when I consider the cruel reverse of fortune which this poor youth, to whom I am so much obliged, hath fuffered: when I consider the loss of your favour, which I know he valued more than his life, I must, I must lament him! If you had a dagger in your hand, ready to plunge into my heart, I must lament the misery of one whom you have loved, and I shall ever love!'

Allworthy was pretty much moved with this speech; but it seemed not to be with anger: for after a short silence, taking Mrs. Miller by the hand, he said very affectionately to her, 'Come, Madam, let us consider a little about your daughter. I cannot blame you for rejoicing in a match which promises to be advantageous to her; but you know this advantage, in a great measure, depends on the father's reconciliation. I know Mr. Nightingale very well, and have formerly had concerns with him; I will make him a visit, and endeavour to serve you in this matter. I believe he is a worldly man: but as this is an only son, and the thing is now irretrievable, perhaps he may, in time, be brought to reason. I promise you, I will do all I can for you.'

Many were the acknowledgments which the poor

woman made to Allworthy for this kind and generous offer; nor could she refrain from taking this occasion again to express her gratitude towards Jones, 'to whom, said she, I owe the opportunity of giving you, Sir, this present trouble.' Allworthy gently stopped her; but he was too good a man to be really offended with the effects of so noble a principle as now actuated Mrs. Miller; and, indeed, had not this new affair inflamed his former anger against Jones, it is possible he might have been a little softened towards him, by the report of an action which malice itself could not have derived from an evil motive.

Mr. Allworthy and Mrs. Miller had been above an hour together, when their conversation was put an end to by the arrival of Blifil, and another person; which other person was no less than Mr. Dowling, the attorney, who was now become a great favourite with Mr. Blifil, and whom Mr. Allworthy, at the desire of his nephew, had made his steward; and had likewise recommended him to Mr. Western, from whom the attorney received a promise of being promoted to the same office upon the first vacancy; and in the mean time was employed in transacting some affairs which the squire then had in London, in relation to a mortgage.

This was the principal affair which then brought Mr. Dowling to town; therefore, he took the fame opportunity to charge himself with some money for Mr. Allworthy, and to make a report to him of some other business; in all which, as it was of much too dull a nature to find any place in this history, we will leave the uncle, nephew, and their lawyer, concerned; and resort

to other matters.

CHAP. VIII.

Concerning various Matters.

REFORE we return to Mr. Jones, we will take one

D more view of Sophia.

Though that young lady had brought her aunt into great good-humour by those soothing methods which we have before related, she had not brought her in the

least to abate of her zeal for the match with Lord Feliamar. This zeal was now inflamed by Lady Bellaston, who had told her the preceding evening, that she was well satisfied, from the conduct of Sophia, and from her carriage to his lordship, that all delays would be dangerous; and that the only way to succeed was, to press the match forward with such rapidity, that the young lady should have no time to resect; and be obliged to consent while she scarce knew what she did. In which manner, she said, one half of the marriages among people of condition were brought about. A fact very probably true, and to which I suppose is owing the mutual tenderness which afterwards exists among so many happy couples.

A hint of the same kind was given by the same lady to Lord Fellamar; and both these so readily embraced the advice, that the very next day was, at his lordship's request, appointed by Mrs. Western for a private interview between the young parties. This was communicated to Sophia by her aunt, and insisted upon in such high terms, that, after having urged every thing she could possibly invent against it, without the least effect, she at last agreed to give the highest instance of complainance which any young lady can give, and consented to

fee his lordship.

As conversations of this kind afford no great entertainment, we shall be excused from reciting the whole that passed at this interview; in which, after his lordship had made many declarations of the most pure and ardent passion, to the silent, blushing Sophia; she at last collected all the spirits she could raise, and with a trembling, low voice, said, 'My lord, you must be yourself conscious whether your former behavour to me hath been consistent with the professions you now make.'—' Is there, answered he, no way by which I can atone for madness? What I did, I am assaid, must have too plainly convinced you, that the violence of love had deprived me of my senses.'—' Indeed, my lord, says she, it is in your power to give me a proof of an affection

which I much rather wish to encourage, and to which I should think myself more beholden.'- Name it, Madam, faid my lord, very warmely '- 'My lord, fays the, looking down upon her fan, I know you must be Ienfible how uneasy this pretended passion of yours hath made me.'- Can you be fo cruel to call it pretended? fays he.'- Yes, my lord, answered Sophia, all professions of love to those whom we persecute are most infulting pretences. This pursuit of yours is to me a most cruel perfecution; nay, it is taking a most ungenerous advantage of my unhappy figuation."- Molt lovely, most adorable charmer, do not accuse me, cries he, of taking an ungenerous advantage, while I have no thoughts but what are directed to your honour and interest, and while I have no view, no hope, no ambition, but to throw myself, honour, fortune, every thing at your feet.'- 'My lord, fays she, it is that fortune, and those honours, which give you the advantage of which I complain. These are the charms which have seduced my relations, but to me they are things indifferent. If your lordship will merit my gratitude, there is but one way.'- Pardon me, divine creature, faid, he; there can be none. All I can do for you is so much your due, and will give me so much pleasure, that there is no room for your gratitude.'- Indeed, my lord, answered she, you may obtain my gratitude, my good opinion, every kind thought and with which it is in my power to bestow; nay, you may obtain them with ease; for, fure, to a generous mind, it must be easy to grant my request. Let me beseech you then, to cease a purfuit, in which you can never have any fuccess. For your own fake, as well as mine, I entreat this favour: for, fure, you are too noble to have any pleasure in tormenting an unhappy creature. What can your lordship propose but uneasiness to yourself, by a perseverance, which, upon my honour, upon my foul, cannot, shall not, prevail with me, whatever distresses you may drive me to! Here my lord fetched a deep figh; and then faid, 'Is it then, Madam, that I am so unhappy to

be the object of your diflike and fcorn? or will you pardon me if I suspect there is some other?' Here he hesitated; and Sophia answered with some spirit, 'My lord, I shall not be accountable to you for the reasons of my conduct. I am obliged to your lordship for the generous offer you have made: I own it is beyond either my deferts or expectations; yet I hope, my lord, you will not infift on my reasons, when I declare I cannot accept it.'- 'Lord Fellamar returned much to this, which we do not perfectly understand, and perhaps it could not all be strictly reconciled either to senie or grammer; but he concluded his ranting speech with saying, that if she had pre-engaged herself to any gentleman, however unhappy it would make him, he should think himself bound in honour to defift. Perhaps my lord laid too much emphasis on the word gentleman; for we cannot else well account for the indignation with which he inspired Sophia, who, in her answer, seemed greatly to resent some affront he had given her.

While the was speaking with her voice more raised than usual, Mrs. Western came into the room, the fire glaring in her cheeks, and the slames bursting from her eyes. I am ashamed, says she, my lord, of the reception which you have met with. I assure your lordship we are all sensible of the honour done us—and I must tell you, Miss Western, the family expect a different behaviour from you. — Here my lord interfered on behalf of the young lady, but to no purpose; the aunt proceeded, till Sophia pulled out her handkerchief, threw herself into a chair, and burst into a violent sit of tears.

The remainder of the conversation between Mrs. Western and his lordship, till the latter withdrew, consisted of bitter lamentations on his side, and on her's, of the strongest assurances that her niece should and would consent to all he wished. Indeed, my lord, says she, the girl hath had a foolish education, neither adapted to her tortune nor her family. Her sather, I am sorry to say it, is to blame for every thing. The girl hath filly country notions of bashfulness; nothing else, my lord,

upon my honour: I am convinced she hath a good understanding at the bottom, and will be brought to reason.'

This last speech was made in the absence of Sophia; for she had some time before left the room, with more appearance of passion than she had ever shewn on any occasion; and now his lordship, after many expressions of thanks to Mrs. Western, many ardent professions of passion which nothing could conquer, and many assurances of perseverance, which Mrs. Western highly encouraged, took his leave for this time.

Before we relate what now passed between Mrs. Western and Sophia, it may be proper to mention an unfortunate accident which had happened, and which had occasioned the return of Mrs. Western with so much fury

as we have feen.

The reader then must know, that the maid who at present attended on Sophia, was recommended by Lady Bellaston, with whom she had lived for some time in the capacity of a comb brush; she was a very sensible girl, and had received the strictest instructions to watch her young lady very carefully. These instructions, we are sorry to say, were communicated to her by Mrs. Honour, into whose favour Lady Bellaston had now so ingratiated herself, that the violent affection which the good waiting-woman had formerly borne to Sophia, was entirely obliterated by that great attachment which she had to her new mistress.

Now, when Mrs. Miller was departed, Betty, (for that was the name of the girl) returning to her young lady, found her very attentively engaged in reading a long letter; and the visible emotions which she betrayed on that occasion might have well accounted for some suspicions which the girl entertained; but, indeed, they had yet a stronger soundation; for she had overheard the whole scene which passed between Sophia and Mrs. Miller.

Mrs. Western was acquainted with all this matter by Betty; who, after receiving many commendations, and

fome rewards, for her fidelity, was ordered, that if the woman who brought the letter came again, she should introduce her to Mrs. Western herself.

Unluckily Mrs. Miller returned at the very time, when Sophia was engaged with his lordship. Betty, according to order, fent her directly to the aunt; who, being mistress of so many circumstances relating to what had passed the day before, easily imposed upon the poor woman to believe that Sophia had communicated the whole affair; and so pumped every thing out of her which she knew relating to the letter, and relating to Jones.

This poor creature might, indeed, be called simplicity itself. She was one of that order of mortals, who are apt to believe every thing which is faid to them: to whom nature hath neither indulged the offensive nor defensive weapons of deceit, and who are constantly liable to be imposed upon by any one, who will only be at the expence of a little falshood for that purpole. Mrs. Weftern having drained Mrs. Miller of all she knew, which indeed was but little, but which was sufficient to make the aunt suspect a great deal, dismissed her with assurances that Sophia would not see her, that she would send no answer to the letter, nor ever receive another: nor did she suffer her to depart without a handsome lecture on the merits of an office, to which the could afford no better name than that of procurefs. This discovery had greatly discomposed her temper, when coming into the apartment next to that in which the lovers were, she overheard Sophia very warmly protesting against his lordship's addresses: at which the rage already kindled burst forth, and she rushed in upon her niece in a most furious manner, as we have already described, 'together with what passed at that time till his lordship's depar-

No sooner was Lord Fellamar gone, than Mrs. Western returned to Sophia, whom she upbraided in the most birter terms, for the ill use she had made of the considence reposed in her; and for her treachery in conversing with a man, with whom she had offered but the day

Vol. III.

before to bind herfelf in the most solemn oath, never more to have any conversation. Sophia protested she had maintained no fuch conversation. 'How! how! Miss Western, said the aunt, will you deny your receiving a letter from him yesterday ?'- A letter, Madam! anfwered Sophia, so newhat surprised.'- It is not very well bred, Miss, replies the aunt, to repeat my words. I fay a letter, and infift upon your shewing it me immediately.'- 'I scorn a lie, Madam, said Sophia: I did receive a letter, but it was without my defire: and, indeed, I may fay, against my consent.'- 'Indeed, indeed, Miss, cries the aunt, you ought to be ashamed of owning you had received it at all: but where is the letter? for I will fee it.'

To this peremptory demand Sophia paufed fome time before the returned an answer; and at last only excused herfelf by declaring the had not the letter in her pocket, which was indeed true; upon which her aunt, lofing all manner of patience, asked her niece this short question, whether she would resolve to marry Lord Fellamar, or no? to which the received the strongest negative. Mrs. Western then replied, with an oath, or something very like one, that she would early the next morning deliver

her back into her father's hand.

Sophia then began to reason with her aunt in the following manner: 'Why, Madam, must I of necessity be forced to marry at all? Consider how cruel you would have thought it in your own cale, and how much kinder your parents were in leaving you to your liberty. What have I done to forfeit this liberty? I will never marry contrary to my father's confent, nor without asking yours. And when I ask the consent of either improperly, it will be then time enough to force some other marriage upon me.'- 'Can I bear to hear this? cries Mrs. Western, from a girl who hath now a letter from a murderer in her pocket.'- I have no such letter, I promise you, answered Sophia; and if he be a murderer, he will foon be in no condition to give you any farther disturbance,'- How, Miss Western, said the

aunt, have you the assurance to speak of him in this manner, to own your affection for such a villain to my face?'- Sure, Madam, said Sophia, you put a very strange construction on my words.'- Indeed, Miss Western, cries the lady, I shall not bear this utage; you have learnt of your father this manner of treating me; he hath taught you to give me the lie. He hath totally ruined you by his falle fystem of education; and please heaven he shall have the comfort of its fruits: for once more I declare to you, that to-morrow morning I will carry you back. I will withdraw all my forces from the field, and remain henceforth, like the wife King of Pruffia, in a state of perfect neutrality .-You are both too wife to be regulated by my measures; To prepare yourfelf; for to-morrow morning you shall evacuate this house.'

Sophia remonstrated all she could; but her aunt was deaf to all she said. In this resolution, therefore, we must at present leave her, as there seems to be no hopes

of bringing her to change it.

CHAP. IX.

What bappened to Mr. Jones in the Prison. TR. Jones passed above twenty-four melancholy hours by himself, unless when relieved by the company of Partridge, before Mr. Nightingale returned: not that this worthy young man had deferted or forgot his friend; for, indeed, he had been much the greatest part of the time employed in his service. He had heard, upon enquiry, that the only perfens who had feen the beginning of the unfortunate rencounter, were a crew belonging to a man of war, which then lay at Deptford. To Deptford therefore he went, in tearch of this crew, where he was informed that the men he fought after were all gone ashore. He then traced them from place to place, till at last he found two of them drinking together with a third person, at a hedge tavern, near Aldersgate.

Nightingale defired to speak with Jones by himself, (for Partridge was in the room when he came in.) As

foon as they were alone, Nightingale, taking Jones by the hand, cried—'Come, my brave triend, be not too much dejected at what I am going to tell you—I am forry I am the messenger of bad news; but I think it my duty to tell you.'—'I guets already what that bad news is, cried Jones. The poor gentleman then is dead.'— I hope not, answered Nightingale; he was alive this morning: though I will not flatter you; I fear, from the accounts I could get, that his wound is mortal.— But if the affair be exactly as you told it, your own remorse would be all you would have reason to apprehend, let what would happen; but forgive me, my dear Tom, if I entreat you to make the worst of your story to your friends. If you disguise any thing to us, you will only

be an enemy to yourfelf."

What reason, my dear Jack, have I ever given you, faid Jones, to flab me with to cruel a fuspicion?"- "Have patience, cries Nightingale, and I will tell you all. After the most diligent enquiry I could make, I at last met with two of the fellows who were present at this unhappy accident; and I am forry to fay, they do not relate the flory to much in your favour as you yourfelf have told it.'- Why, what do they fay?' cries Jones. - Indeed, what I am forry to repeat; as I am afraid of the consequence of it to you. They fay, that they were at two great a distance to overhear any words that paffed between you; but they both agree that the first blow was given by you. - Then, upon my foul, anfwered Jones, they injure me. He not only ftruck me first, but struck me without the least provocation. What should induce those villains to accuse me falfely?'-Nay, that I cannot gues, taid Nightingale: and if you yourlelf, and I, who am so heartily your friend, cannot conceive a reason why they should belie you, what teaton will an indifferent court of justice be able to affign, why they should not believe them ? I repeated the question to them several times, and so did another gentleman who was present, who, I believe, is a sea-far. ing man, and who really acted a very friendly part by

you: for he begged them often to confider, that there was the life of a man in the case; and asked them over and over, if they were certain; to which they both anfwered, that they were, and would abide by their evidence upon oath. For heaven's fake my dear friend, recollect yourfelf! for if this should appear to be the fact, it will be your business to think in time of making the best of your interest. I would not shock you; but you know, I believe, the severity of the law, whatever verbal provocations may have been given you." - Alas! my friend, cries Jones, what interest hath fuch a wretch as I? Besides, do you think I would even wish to live with the imputation of a murderer? If I had any friends, (as alas! I have none,) could I have the confidence to folicit them to fpeak in the behalf of a man condemned for the blackest crime in human nature? Believe me, I have no such hope; but I have some reliance on a throne still greatly superior; which will, I am certain, afford me all the protection I merit!'

He then concluded with many folemn and vehement protestations of the truth of what he had at first afferted.

The faith of Nightingale was now again staggered, and began to incline to credit his friend; when Mrs. Miller appeared, and made a sorrowful report of the success of her embassy; which, when Jones had heard, he cried out most heroically, 'Well, my friend, I am now indifferent as to what shall happen, at least with regard to my life; and if it be the will of heaven that I shall make an atonement with that for the blood I have spilt, I hope the divine goodness will one day suffer my honour to be cleared, and that the words of a dying man at least will be believed so far as to justify his character.'

A very mournful scene now passed between the prifoner and his friends; at which, as sew readers would have been pleased to be present, so sew, I believe, will defire to hear it particularly related. We will, therefore, pass on to the entrance of the turnkey, who acquainted Jones, that there was a lady without who defired to speak to

him when he was at leifure.

Jones declared his furprife at this message. He said, he knew no lady in the world whom he could possibly expect to see there. However, as he saw no reason to decline seeing any person, Mrs. Miller and Mr. Nightingale presently took their leave, and he gave orders to have the lady admitted.

If Jones was surprised at the news of a visit from the lady, how greatly was he astonished when he discovered this lady to be no other than Mrs. Waters! In this astonishment, then, we shall leave him awhile, in order to cure the surprise of the reader, who will likewise, probably, not a little wonder at the arrival of this lady.

Who this Mrs. Waters was, the reader pretty well knows; what she was, he must be perfectly satisfied. He will therefore be pleased to remember, that this lady departed from Upton in the same coach with Mr. Fitzpatrick, and the other Irish gentleman, and in their com-

pany travelled to Bath.

Now there was a certain office in the gift of Mr. Fitz-patrick at that time vacant, namely, that of a wife; for the lady who had lately filled that office had refigned, or at least deserted her duty. Mr. Fitzpatrick, therefore, having thoroughly examined Mrs. Waters on the road, found her extremely fit for the place, which, on her arrival at Bath, he presently conferred upon her, and she without any scruple accepted. As husband and wife the gentleman and lady continued together all the time they staid at Bath; and as husband and wife they arrived together in town.

Whether Mr. Fitzpatrick was so wise a man as not to part with one good thing till he had secured another, which he had at present only a prospect of regaining, or whether Mrs. Waters had so well discharged her office, that he intended still to retain her as principal, and to make his wise (as is often the case) only her deputy, I will not say; but certain it is, he never mentioned his wife to her, never communicated to her the letter given

him, by Mrs. Western, nor ever since hinted his purpose of repossessing his wife; and much less did he ever mention the name of Jones. For though he intended to fight with him wherever he niet him, he did not imitate those prudent persons who think a wife, a mother, a sister, or sometimes a whole family, the safest seconds on these occasions. The first account, therefore, which she had of all this, was delivered to her from his lips after he was brought home from the tavern where his wound had been dressed.

As Mr. Fitzpatrick, however, had not the clearest way of telling a story at any time, and was now, perhaps, a little more confused than usual, it was some time before she discovered, that the gentleman who had given him this wound, was the very same person from whom her heart had received a wound, which, though not of a mortal kind, was yet so deep, that it had left a considerable scar behind it. But no sooner was she acquainted that Mr. Jones himself was the man who had been committed to the Gate-house for this supposed murder, than she took the first opportunity of committing Mr. Fitzpatrick to the care of his nurse, and hastened

away to visit the conqueror.

She now entered the room with an air of gaiety, which received an immediate check from the melancholy aspect of poor Jones, who started, and blessed himself. when he faw her. Upon which she said, 'Nay, I do not wonder at your surprise. I believe you did not expect to see me; for few gentlemen are troubled here with visits from any lady, unless a wife. You see the power you have over me, Mr. Jones. Indeed, I little thought, when we parted at Upton, that our next meeting would have been in such a place.'- Indeed, Madam, fays Jones, I must look upon this visit as kind; few will follow the milerable, especially to such dismal habitations.'- I protest, Mr. Jones, favs she, I can hardly perfuade mylelf you are the same agreeable sellow I faw at Upton. Why, your face is more miferable than any dungeon in the universe! What can be the matter with you?'- 'I thought, Madam, faid Jones, as you knew of my being here, you knew the unhappy reason.'- 'Pugh, said she, you have pinked a man in a duel, that's all!' Jones expressed some indignation at this levity, and spoke with the utmost contrition for what had happened. To which she answered- Well then, Sir, if you take it so much to heart, I will relieve you: the gentleman is not dead; and, I am pretty confident, is in no danger of dying. The furgeon, indeed, who first dressed him, was a young fellow, and feemed desirous of representing his case to be as bad as possible, that he might have the more honour from curing him; but the king's furgeon hath feen him fance, and fays, unless from a fever, of which there are at prefent no symptoms, he apprehends not the least danger of life.' Jones shewed great satisfaction in his countenance at this report; upon which the affirmed the truth of it, adding- By the most extraordinary accident in the world, I lodge at the same house, and have seen the gentleman; and I promise you he doth you justice, and fays, whatever be the consequence, that he was entirely the aggreffor, and that you was not in the least to blame.'

Jones expressed the utmost satisfaction at the account which Mrs. Waters brought him. He then informed her of many things which she well knew before; as who Mr. Fitzpatrick was, the occasion of his resentment, &c. he likewise told her several facts of which she was ignorant, as the adventure of the must, and other particulars, concealing only the name of Sophia. He then lamented the follies and vices of which he had been guilty; every one of which, he said, had been attended with such ill consequences, that he should be unpardonable if he did not take warning, and quit those vicious courses for the future. He lastly concluded with assuring she of his resolution to sin no more, lest a worse thing should happen to him.

Mrs. Waters, with great pleafantry, ridiculed all this as the effects of low spirits and confinement. She

repeated some witticisms about the devil when he was fick, and told him, the doubted not but thortly to fee him at liberty, and as lively a tellow as ever :- ' And then, fays she, I don't question but your conscience will be fafely delivered of all those qualms that it is now so

fick in breeding."

Many more things of this kind she uttered, some of which it would do her no great honour, in the opinion of some readers to remember; nor are we quite certain but that the answers made by Jones would be treated with ridicule by others. We shall, therefore, suppress the rest of this conversation; and only observe, that it ended at last with perfect innocence, and much more to the fatisfaction of Jones than of the lady: for the former was greatly transported with the news the had brought him; but the latter was not altogether fo pleased with the penitential behaviour of a man, whom the had, at her first interview, conceived a very different opinion of from what the now entertained of him.

Thus the melancholy occasioned by the report of Mr. Nightingale was pretty well effaced, but the dejection into which Mrs. Miller had thrown him still continued; the account the gave to well tallied with the words of Sophia herself in her letter, that he made not the least doubt but the had disclosed his letter to her aunt, and had taken a fixed resolution to abandon him. The torments this thought gave him were to be equalled only by a piece of news which Fortune had yet in store for him, and which we shall communicate in the second chap-

ter of the enfuing book.

on rists? Bed Stre

very one of whitHIVX XOOB been accended

Containing above Six Days. shote victoria cont

CHAP. I.

A Farewel to the Reader.

E are now, reader, arrived at the last stage of our long journey. As we have, therefore, travelled together through so many pages, let us behave to one

another like fellow-travellers in a stage-coach, who have passed several days in company of each other; and who, notwithstanding any bickerings or little animofities which may have occurred on the road, generally make all up at last, and mount, for the last time, into their vehicle with cheerfulness and good humour; fince, after this one stage, it may possibly happen to us, as it commonly happens to them, never to meet more.

. As I have here taken up this fimile, give me leave to carry it a little farther. I intend, then, in this last book, to imitate the good company I have mentioned in their last journey. Now, it is well known, that all jokes and raillery are at this time laid afide: whatever

characters any of the passengers have, for the jest sake, personated on the road, are now thrown off, and the

convertation is usually plain and ferious.

In the same manner, if I have now and then, in the course of this work, indulged any pleasantry for thyentertainment, I shall here lay it down. The variety of matter, indeed, which I shall be obliged to cram into this book will afford no room for any of those ludicrous observations which I have elsewhere made, and which may fometimes, perhaps, have prevented thee from taking a nap when it was beginning to fteal upon thee. In this last book, thou wilt find nothing (or at most very little) of that nature; all will be plain narrative only; and, indeed, when thou halt peruled the many great events which this book will produce, thou wilt think the number of pages contained in it scarce sufficient to tell the ftory.

And now, my friend, I take this opportunity (as I' shall have no other) of heartily wishing thee well. If I have been an entertaining companion to thee, I promife thee, it is what I have defired. If in any thing I have offended, it was really without an intention. Some things, perhaps, here faid, may have hit thee, or thy friends; but I do most solemnly declare, they were not pointed at thee or them. I question not, but thou hast been told, among other stories of me, that thou wast to

travel with a very scurrilous fellow: but whoever told thee so did me an injury. No man detests and despites scurrility more than myself; nor hath any man more reason; for none hath ever been treated with more: and, what is a very severe fate, I have had some of the abusive writings of those very men fathered upon me; who, in other of their works, have abused me themselves with the utmost virulence.

All these works, however, I am well convinced, will be dead before this page shall offer itself to thy perusal; for, however short the period may be of my own performances, they will most probably outlive their own infirm author, and the weakly productions of his abusive cotemporaries.

CHAP. II.

Containing a very tragical Incident.

WHILE Jones was employed in those unpleasant meditations with which we left him tormenting himself, Partridge came stumbling into the room, with his face paler than ashes, his eyes fixed in his head, his hair standing an end, and every limb trembling. In short, he looked as he would have done, had he seen a spectre; or had he, indeed, been a spectre himself.

Jones, who was little subject to fear, could not avoid being somewhat shocked at this sudden appearance. He did, indeed, himself change colour, and his voice a little faultered, while he asked him what was the matter.

"I hope, Sir, said Partridge, you will not be angry with me. Indeed, I did not listen, but I was obliged to stay in the outward room. I am sure I wish I had been a hundred miles off, rather than have heard what I have heard."—"Why, what is the matter?" said Jones. "The matter, Sir? O good Heaven! answered Partridge; was that woman who is just gone out, the woman who was with you at Upton?"—"She was, Partridge," cries Jones. "And did you really, Sir, go to bed with that woman? said he, trembling."—"I ain asraid, what passed between us is no secret, said Jones."—"Nay, but pray, Sir, for

Heaven's fake, Sir, answer me, cries Partridge.'—'You know I did, cries Jones.'—'Why, then, the Lord have mercy upon your toul, and forgive you! cries Partridge: but as sure as I stand here alive, you have been a-bed

with your own mother!'

Upon these words, Jones became in a moment a greater picture of horror than Partridge himself. He was, indeed, for some time, struck dumb with amazement, and both stood staring wildly at each other. At last, his words sound way; and, in an interrupted voice, he said, 'How! how! what's this you tell me!'—'Nay, Sir, cries Partridge, I have not breath lest enough to tell you now—but what I have said is most certainly true: that woman who now went out is your own mother. How unlucky was it for you, Sir, that I did not happen to see her at that time, to have prevented it! Sure the devil him—self must have contrived to bring about this wickedness.'

Sure, cries Jones, fortune will never have done with me till the hath driven me to distraction. But why do I blame Fortune? I am myfelf the cause of all my misery. All the dreadful mischiefs which have befallen me are the consequences only of my own folly and vice. What thou hast told me, Partridge, hath almost deprived me of my fenfes. And was Mrs. Waters, then-But why do I ask? for thou must certainly know her. If thou haft any affection for me, nay, if thou haft any pity, let me befeech thee to fetch this miserable woman back again to me. O good Heaven! Incest with a mother! To what am I referved?' He then fell into the most violent and frantic agonies of grief and despair, in which Partridge declared he would not leave him: but at last, having vented the first torrent of passion, he came a little to himself; and then, having acquainted Partridge that he would find this wretched woman in the fame house where the wounded gentleman was lodged, he dispatched him in quest of her.

If the reader will please to refresh his memory, by turning to the scene at Upton, in the ninth book, he will be apt to admire the many strange accidents which unfortunately prevented any interview between Partridge and Mrs. Waters, when the spent a whole day there with Mr. Jones. Instances of this kind we may frequently observe in life, where the greatest events are produced by a nice train of little circumstances: and more than one example of this may be discovered, by the accurate eye, in this our history.

After a fruitless fearch of two or three hours, Partridge returned back to his master, without having seen Mrs. Waters. Jones, who was in a state of desperation at his delay, was almost raving mad when he brought him this account. He was not long, however, in this con-

dition, before he received the following letter:

Since I left you, I have seen a gentleman, from whom I have learnt something concerning you, which greatly surprises and affects me; but as I have not, at present, leisure to communicate a matter of such high importance, you must suspend your curiosity till our next meeting, which shall be the first moment I am able to see you. O, Mr. Jones, little did I think, when I passed that happy day at Upton, the respection upon which is like to embitter all my suture life, who it was to whom I owned such perfect happiness. Believe me to be ever sincerely your unfortunate

'F. Waters.'

P. S. I would have you comfort yourself as much as possible:

for Mr. Fitzpatrick is in no manner of danger; so that subatever other prievous crimes you may have to repent of, the guilt of blood is

not among the number.

Jones having read the letter let it drop, (for he was unable to hold it, and, indeed, had scarce the use of any one of his faculties.) Partridge took it up, and having received consent, by silence, read it likewise; nor had it upon him a less sensible effect. The pencil, and not the pen, should describe the horrors which appeared in both their countenances. While they both remained speechless, the turnkey entered the room, and without taking any notice of what sufficiently discovered itself in the faces of them both, acquainted Jones that a man without desired to speak with him. This person was presently introduced, and was no other than Black George.

As fights of horror were not so usual to George was they were to the turnkey, he instantly saw the great dise Vol. 111.

order which appeared in the face of Jones. This he imputed to the accident that had happened, which was reported in the very worst light in Mr. Western's family; he concluded, therefore, that the gentleman was dead, and that Mr. Jones was in a fair way of coming to a shameful end. A thought which gave him much uneafiness: for George was of a compassionate disposition; and, notwithstanding a small breach of friendship which he had been over-tempted to commit, was, in the main, not insensible of the obligations he had formerly received from Mr. Jones.

The poor fellow, therefore, scarce refrained from a tear at the present fight. He told Jones he was heartily sorry for his missfortunes, and begged him to consider, if he could be of any manner of service. Perhaps, Sir, said he, you may want a little matter of money upon this occasion; if you do, Sir, what little I have is heartily at your service.

Jones shook him very heartily by the hand, and gave him many thanks for the kind offer he had made; but answered, he had not the least want of that kind. Upon which, George began to press his services more eagerly than before. Jones again thanked him, with affurances that he wanted nothing which was in the power of any man living to give. 'Come, come, my good master, answered George, do not take the matter so much to heart. Things may end better than you imagine: to be fure, you a'nt the first gentleman who hath killed a man, and yet come off.'- You are wide of the matter, George, faid Partridge: the gentleman is not dead, nor like to die. Don't disturb my master at present, for he is troubled about a matter, in which it is not in your power to do him any good.'- 'You don't know what I may be able to do, Mr. Partridge, answered George: if his concern is about my young lady, I have some news to tell my master:'- What do you say, Mr. George? cries Jones: Hath any thing lately happened in which my Sophia is concerned? My Sophia! How dares such a wretch as I mention her so prophanely!'- 'I hope she will be yours yet, answered George. Why, yes, Sir, I have something to tell you about her. Madam Western has just brought Madam Sophia home, and there hath been a terrible to do. I could not possibly learn the very right of it; but my master, he hath been in a vast big passion, and so was Madam Western, and I heard her fay, as the went out of doors into her chair, that the would never fet her foot in matter's house again. don't know what's the matter, not I; but every thing was very quiet when I came out: but Robin, who waited at supper, said he had never seen the squire, for a long while in such good humour with young Madam, that he kiffed her feveral times, and swore she should be her own mistress, and he never would think of confining her any more. I thought this news would please you, and fo I flipped out, though it was fo late, to inform you of it.' Mr. Jones affured George that it greatly pleafed him; for though he should never more presume to lift his eyes towards that incomparable creature, nothing could so much relieve his misery, as the satisfaction he should always have in hearing of her welfare.

The rest of the conversation which passed at the visit is not important enough to be here related. The reader will, therefore, forgive us this abrubt breaking off, and be pleased to hear how this great good-will of the squire

towards his daughter was brought about.

Mrs. Western, on her first arrival at her brother's lodging, began to set forth the great honours and advantages which would accrue to the family by the match with Lord Fellamar, which her niece had absolutely resused; in which resusal, when the squire took the part of his daughter, she fell immediately into the most violent passion; and so irritated and provoked the squire, that neither his patience nor his prudence could bear it any longer; upon which there ensued between them both so warm an altercation, that perhaps the regions of Billingsgate never equalled it. In the heat of this scolding Mrs. Western departed, and had, consequently, no leisure to acquaint her brother with the letter which Sophia received, which might have possibly produced ill effects; but to

fay the truth, I believe it never once occurred to her

memory at this time.

When Mrs. Western was gone, Sophia, who had been hitherto filent, as well indeed from necessity as inclination, began to return the compliment which her father had made her, in taking her part against her aunt, by taking his likewise against the lady. This was the first time of her so doing, and it was in the highest degree acceptable to the squire. Again, he remembered that Mr. Allworthy had infifted on an entire relinquishment of all violent means; and, indeed, as he made no doubt but that Jones would be hanged, he did not in the least question succeeding with his daughter by fair means: he now, therefore, once more gave a loofe to his natural fondness for her; which had such an effect on the dutiful, grateful, tender, and affectionate heart of Sophia, that had her honour given to Jones, and fomething elfe, perhaps, in which he was concerned, been removed, I much doubt whether the would not have facrificed herfelf to a man she did not like, to have obliged her father. She promised him, she would make it the whole business of her life to oblige him, and would never marry any man against his consent; which brought the old man so near to his highest happiness, that he was resolved to take the other step, and went to bed completely drunk.

CHAP. III.

Allworthy vifits old Nightingale; with a strange Discovery that he made on that Occasion.

THE morning after these things had happened, Mr. Allworthy went, according to his promise, to visit old Nightingale, with whom his authority was so great, that, after having sat with him three hours, he at last

prevailed with him to confent to fee his fon.

Here an accident happened of a very extraordinary kind: one, indeed, of those strange chances, whence very good and grave men have concluded, that Providence often interposes in the discovery of the most secret villainy, in order to caution men from quitting the

paths of honesty, however warily they tread in those of vice.

Mr. Allworthy, at his entrance into Mr. Nightingale's, faw Black George: he took no notice of him, nor did Black George imagine he had perceived him. However, when their convertation on the principal point was over, Allworthy asked Nightingale, whether he knew one George Seagrim, and upon what bufiness he came to his house. 'Yes, answered Nightingale, I know him very well; and a most extraordinary fellow he is, who, in these days, hath been able to hoard up sool, from renting a very small estate of 30l. a year.'- 'And is this the story he has told you?' cries Allworthy. 'Nay, it is true, I promise you, said Nightingale; for I have the money now in my own hands, in five bank bills, which I am to lay out, either in a mortgage, or in some purchase in the north of England.' The bank bills were no sooner produced, at Allworthy's desire, than he blessed himself at the strangeness of the discovery. He presently told Nightingale, that these bank bills were formerly his: and then acquainted him with the whole affair. As there are no men who complain more of the frauds of business, than highwaymen, gamesters, and other thieves of that kind; so there are none who so bitterly exclaim against the frauds of gamesters, &c. as usurers, brokers, and other thieves of this kind. Whether it be, that the one way of cheating is a discountenance or reflection upon the other, or that money, which is the common miftress of all cheats, makes them regard each other in the light of rivals, but Nightingale no fooner heard the story; than he exclaimed against the fellow in terms much severer than the justice and honesty of Allworthy had bestowed on him.

Allworthy defired Nightingale to retain both the money and the secret till he should hear farther from him; and if he should in the mean time see the sellow, that he would not take the least notice to him of the discoevery which he had made. He then returned to his lodgings, where he found Mrs. Miller in a very dejected condition, on account of the information she had received from her son-in-law. Mr. Allworthy, with great cheer-fulness, told her, that he had much good news to communicate; and, with little farther preface, acquainted her, that he had brought Mr. Nightingale to consent to see his son; and did not in the least doubt to effect a perfect reconciliation between them, though he found the father more sourced by another accident of the same kind, which had happened in his family. He then mentioned the running away of the uncle's daughter, which he had been told by the old gentleman, and which Mrs. Miller, and her son-in-law, did not yet know.

The reader may suppose Mrs. Miller received this account with great thankfulness, and no less pleasure; but so uncommon was her friendship to Jones, that I am not certain whether the uneasiness she suffered for his sake did not overbalance her satisfaction, at hearing a piece of news tending so much to the happiness of her own samily; nor whether even this very news, as it reminded her of the obligations she had to Jones, did not hurt as well as please her; when her grateful heart said to her, While my own family is happy, how miserable is the poor creature to whose generosity we owe the beginning

of all this unhappiness.'

Allworthy having left her a little while to chew the eud (if I may use that expression) on these first tidings, told her, he had still something more to impart, which he believed would give her pleasure. 'I think, said he, I have discovered a pretty considerable treasure belonging to the young gentleman, your friend; but, perhaps, indeed, his present situation may be such, that it will be of no service to him.' The latter part of the speech gave Mrs. Miller to understand who was meant; and she answered with a sigh, 'I hope not Sir.'—'I hope so too, cries Allworthy, with all my heart; but my nephew told me this morning, he had heard a very bad account of the affair.'—'Good Heaven, Sir! said the. Well, I must not speak; and yet it is certainly very hard to be obliged to hold one's tongue, when one hears—'—'Ma-

r

d

ıt

a

e

h

.

.

t

dam, faid Allworthy, you may say whatever you pleases you know me too well, to think I have a prejudice against any one; and as for that young man, I assure you I should be heartily pleased to find he could acquit himself of every thing, and particularly of this sad affair. You can testify the affection I have formerly borne him. The world, I know, censured me for loving him so much. I did not withdraw that affection from him without thinking I had the justest cause. Believe me, Mrs. Miller, I should be glad to find I have been mistaken.

Mrs. Miller was going eagerly to reply, when a servant acquainted her, that a gentleman without desired to speak with her immediately. Allworthy then enquired for his nephew, and was told that he had been for some time in his room, with the gentleman who used to come to him; and whom Mr. Allworthy guessing rightly to be Mr. Dowling, he desired presently to speak with him.

When Dowling attended, Allworthy put the case of the Bank notes to him, without mentioning any name; and asked in what manner such a person might be punished. To which Dowling answered, he thought he might be indicted on the Black Act; but faid, as it was a matter of some nicety, it would be proper to go to counsel. He said, he was to attend counsel presently, upon an affair of Mr. Western's: and if Mr. Allworthy pleased, he would lay the case before them. This was agreed to; and then Mrs. Miller opening the door, cried, 'I ask pardon, I did not know you had company!' but Mr. Allworthy defired her to come in, faying, he had finished his business. Upon which Mr. Dowling withdrew, and Mrs. Miller introduced Mr. Nightingale the younger, to return thanks for the great kindness done him by Allworthy; but she had scarce patience to let the young gentleman finish his speech, before she interrupted him, saying, 'O, Sir! Mr. Nightingale brings great news about poor Mr. Jones! He hath been to see the wounded gentleman, who is out of all danger of death; and, what is more,

declares he fell upon poor Mr. Jones himself, and beat him. I am fure, Sir, you would not have Mr. Jones be a coward. If I was a man myfelf, I am fure, if any man was to firike me, I should draw my sword. Do, pray, my dear, tell Mr. Allworthy, tell him all yourself!' Nightingale then confirmed what Mrs. Miller had faid : and concluded with many handsome things of Jones, who was, he faid, one of the best natured fellows in the world, and not in the least inclined to be quarrelsome. Here Nightingale was going to cease, when Mrs. Miller again begged him to relate all the many dutiful expressions he had heard him make use of towards Mr. Allworthy .- 'To fay the utmost good of Mr. Allworthy, cries Nightingale, is doing no more than frict juffice, and can have no merit in it; but, indeed, I must fay, no man can be more sensible of the obligations he hath to so good a man, than is poor Jones. Indeed, Sir, I am convinced the weight of your displeasure is the heaviest burthen he lies under. He hath often lamented it to me, and hath as often protefted, in the most solemn manner, he hath never been intentiously guilty of any offence towards you: nay, he hath fworn, he would rather die a thousand deaths, than he would have his conscience upbraid him with one disrespectful, ungrateful, or undutiful, thought towards you. But I alk pardon, Sir; I am afraid I presume to intermeddle too far in so tender a point.'- You have spoken no more than what a Christian ought, cries Mrs. Miller.'- 'Indeed, Mr. Nightingale, answered Allworthy, I applaud your generous friendship, and I wish he may merit it of you. I confess, I am glad to hear the report you bring from this unfortunate gentleman; and if that matter should turn out to be as you represent it, (and, indeed, I doubt nothing of what you fay,) I may, perhaps, in time, be brought to think better than lately I have of this young man; for this good gentlewoman here, nay, all who know me, can witness, that I loved him as dearly as if he had been my own son. Indeed, I have considered him as a child fent by fortune to my care. I still remember the innocent, the helples situation in which I found him. I feel the tender pressure of his little hands at this moment. He was my darling; indeed, he was. At which words he ceased, and the tears stood in his

eyes.

As the answer which Mrs. Miller made may lead us into fresh matters, we will here stop, to account for the visible alteration in Mr. Allworthy's mind, and the abatement of his anger to Jones. Revolutions of this kind, it is true, do frequently occur in histories and dramatic writers, for no other reason, than because the history or play draws to a conclusion, and are justified by authority of authors; yet, though we insist upon as much authority as any author whatever, we shall use this power very spaningly, and never but when we are driven to it by necessity; which we do not at present foresee will happen in this work.

This alteration, then, in the mind of Mr. Allworthy, was occasioned by a letter he had just received from Mr. Square, and which we shall give the reader in the be-

ginning of the next chapter.

CHAP. IV.

Containing two Letters in very different Styles.

My Worthy Friend,

I Informed you in my last, that I was forbidden the use of the waters, as they were found by experience rather to increase than lessen the symptoms of my distemper. I must now acquaint you with a fiece of news, which, I believe, will afflict my friends more than it afflicted me. Dr. Harrington and Dr. Brewester have informed me,

that there are no hopes of my recovery.

I have somewhere read, that the great use of philosophy is to learn to aie. I will not, therefore, so far disgrace mine, as to show any surprise at receiving a lesson which I must be thought to have so long studied. Yet, to say the truth, one page of the gospel teaches this lesson better than all the wolumes of ancient or modern philosophers. The assurance it gives us of another life is a much stronger support to a good mind, than all the consolations that are drawn from the necessity of nature, the emptiness or satiety of our enjoyments here, on any other topic of those declamations, which are sometimes capable of arming our minds with a stubborn patience in bearing the thoughts of death, but never of raising them to a real contempt of it, and much less of making us think it as a real good. I would not here be understood to throw

the borrid censure of atheism, or even the absolute denial of immortality, on all who are called philosophers. Many of that sect, as well ancient as modern, have, from the light of reason, discovered some bopes of a future state; but, in reality, that light was so faint and glimmering, and the hopes were so uncertain and precarious, that it may be justly doubted on which side their belief turned. Plato himself concludes his Phædon with declaring, that his best arguments amount only to raise a probability; and Cicero himself seems rather to prosess an inclination to believe, than any actual belief in the doctrines of immortality. As to myself, to be very sincere with you, I never was much in earnest in this faith, till I was in earnest a christian.

You will, perhaps, wonder at the latter expression; but I assure you, it hath not been till very lately, that I could, with truth, call myself so. The pride of philosophy had intoxicated my reason, and the sublimest of all wisdom appeared to me, as it did to the Greeks of old, to be foolishness. God hath, however, been so gracious to show me my error in time, and to bring me into the way of truth, before I

funk into utter darkness for ever.

I find myself beginning to grow weak. I shall therefore basten to

the main purpose of this letter.

When I reflect on the actions of my past life, I know nothing which fits beavier on my conscience, than the injustice I have been guilty of to that poor wretch, your adopted son. I have, indeed, not only conmoved at the villary of others, but been myself active in injustice towards bim. Believe me, my dear friend, when I tell you, on the word of a dying man, be bath been basely injured. As to the principal fact, upon the misrepresentation of which you discarded him, I solemnly affure you be is innocent. When you lay upon your supposed death-bed, he was the only person in the bouse who testified any real concern; and what happened afterwards arose from the wildness of bis joy on your recovery; and, I am forry to say it, from the baseness of another person; (but it is my desire to justify the innocent, and to accuse none.) Believe me, my friend, this young man bath the nobleft generofity of beart, the most perfect capacity for friendship; the bigbest integrity; and, indeed, every virtue which can ennoble a man. He bath some faults, but among them is not to be numbered the least want of duty or gratitude towards you. On the contrary, I am satisfied, when you dismissed him from your bouse, his beart bled for you more than for himself.

Worldly motives were the wicked and base reasons of my conceasing this from you so long: to reveal it now, I can have no inducement, but the desire of serving the cause of truth, of doing right to the innocent, and of making all the amends in my power for a past offence. I hope this declaration, therefore, will have the effect desired, and will restore this deserving young man to your savour; the hearing of which,

while I am yet alive, will afford the utmost consolation, to, Sir, your most obliged, obedient, bumble servant,

. Thomas Square.

The reader will, after this, scarce wonder at the revolution so visibly appearing in Mr. Allworthy; notwithstanding he received from Thwackum, by the same post, another letter of a different kind, which we shall here add, as it may possibly be the last time we shall have occasion to mention the name of that gentleman.

Sir,

5

0

3

r

1

d

- e - Idalfis o - e a

I am not at all surprised at bearing from your worthy net bew a fresh instance of the villary of Mr. Square the atheist's young surik. I shall not wonder at any murders he may commit; and I bearily pray that your own blood may not seal up his final commitment to the place

of wailing and gnashing of teeth.

Though you cannot want sufficient calls to repentance, for the many unwarrantable weaknesses exemplified in your behaviour to this wretch, so much to the prejudice of your own lawful family, and of your character; I say, though these may sufficiently be supposed to prick and goad your conscience at this season; I should yet be wanting in my duty, if I spared to give you some admonition, in order to bring you to a due sense of your errors. I therefore tray you seriously to consider the judgment which is likely to overtake this wicked willain; and let it serve, at least, as a warning to you, that you may not for the suture destile the advice of one who is so indefatigable in his trayers for your weifare.

Had not my band been withheld from due correction, I had scourged much of this aiabolical spirit out of a boy, of whom, from his infancy, I discovered the devil had taken such entire possession; but repetitions

of this kind now come too late.

I am forry you have given away the living of Western so bastily. I should have applied on that occasion earlier, had I thought you would not have acquainted me previous to the disposition. Your objection to pluralities is being righteous over-much. If there were any crime in the practice, so many godly men would not agree to it. If the vicar of Aldergrove should die, (as we hear he is in a declining way), I hope you will think of me, since I am certain you must be convinced of my most sincere attachment to your highest welfare; a welfare to which all worldly considerations are as tristing as the small tubes mentioned in Scripture are, when compared to the weighty matters of the law, I am, Sir, your faithful kumble servant,

Roger Thawckum.

This was the first time Thwackum ever wrote in this authoritative style to Allworthy; and of this he had afterwards sufficient reason to repent, as is the case of those

who mistake the highest degree of goodness for the lowest degree of weaknels. Allworthy had indeed never liked this man. He knew him to be proud and ill-natured; he also knew that his divinity ittelf was tinctured with his temper, and fuch as in many respects he himfelf did by no means approve: but he was at the same time an excellent scholar, and most indefatigable in teaching the two lads. Add to this, the strict severity of his life and manners, an unimpeached honefty, and a most devout attachment to religion. So that, upon the whole, though Allworthy did not esteem nor love the man, yet he could never bring himself to part with a tutor to the boys, who was, both by learning and industry, extremely well qualified for his office; and he hoped, that as they were bred up in his own house, and under his own eye, he should be able to correct whatever was wrong in Thwackum's instructions.

CHAP. V.

In which the History is continued.

R. Allworthy, in his last speech, had recollected Some tender ideas concerning Jones, which had brought tears into the good man's eyes. This Mrs. Miller observing, said, 'Yes, yes, Sir, your goodness to this poor young man is known, notwithstanding all your care to conceal it; but there is not a fingle syllable of truth in what those villains said. Mr. Nightingale has now discovered the whole matter. It seems, these fellows were employed by a lord, who is a rival of poor Mr. Jones, to have him pressed on board a ship-I asfure them! I don't know who they will press next! Mr. Nightingale here hath feen the officer himself, who is a very pretty gentleman, and hath told him all, and is very forry for what he undertook; which he would never have done, had he known Mr. Jones to have been a gentleman; but he was told that he was a common firolling vagabond.'

Allworthy stared at all this, and declared he was a stranger to every word she said. Yes, Sir, answered

the, I believe you are. It is a very different story, E, believe, from what those fellows told the lawyer.

What lawyer, Madam? What is it you mean? faid Allworthy. 'Nay, nay, faid fhe, this is so like you, to deny your own goodness! but Mr. Nightingale here faw him.'- Saw whom, Madam?'-answered he. Why, your lawyer, Sir, faid she, that you so kindly fent to inquire into the affair.'- I am still in the dark. upon my honour, faid Allworthy .- Why then, do you tell him, my dear Sir,' cries she .- ' Indeed, Sir, faid Nightingale, I did see that very lawyer who went from you, when I came into the room, at an alehouse at Aldersgate, in company with two of the fellows who were employed by Lord Fellamar to press Mr. Iones. and who were, by that means, present at the unhappy rencounter between him and Mr. Fitzpatrick.'- I own, Sire faid Mrs. Miller, when I faw this gentleman come into the room to you, I told Mr. Nightingale, that I apprehended you had fent him thither to inquire into the affair.'-Allworthy shewed marks of astonishment in his countenance at this news; and was, indeed, for two or three minutes flruck dumb by it. At last, addressing himself to Mr. Nightingale, he said, I must confess myself, Sir, more surprized at what you tell me, than I have ever been before at any thing in my whole life. Are you certain this was the gentleman?'- I am most certain, answered Nightingale.'- At Aldersgate? cries Allworthy. And was you in company with this lawyer and the two fellows?'- I was, Sir, faid the other, very near half an hour.'- Well, Sir, faid Allworthy, and in what manner did the lawyer behave? Did you hear all that passed between him and the fellows?"-'No, Sir, answered Nightingale; they had been together before I came. In my presence the lawyer said little; but after I had several times examined the fellows, who perfifted in a flory directly contrary to what I have heard from Mr. Jones, and which I find by Mr. Fitzpatrick was a rank falshood, the lawyer then defired the fellows to fay nothing but what was the truth; and VOL. III.

feemed to speak so much in favour of Mr. Jones, that, when I saw the same person with you, I concluded your goodness had prompted you to send him thither.'—'And did you not send him thither?' said Mrs. Miller.—'Indeed I did not, answered Allworthy; nor did I know he had gone on such an errand till this moment.'—'I see it all, said Mrs. Miller: upon my soul, I see it all. No wonder they have been closeted so close lately. Son Nightingale, let me beg you to run for these fellows immediately—find them out, if they are above ground. I will go myself. Dear Madam, said Allworthy, be patient, and do me the savour to send a servant up stairs to call Mr. Dowling hither, if he be in

the house; or if not, Mr. Blifil.' Mrs. Miller went out muttering something to herself; and presently returned with an answer, that Mr. Dowling was gone.

Allworthy was of a cooler disposition than the good woman, whose spirits were all up in arms in the cause of her friend. He was not, however, without some suspicions which were near a-kin to her's. When Bliss came into the room, he asked him with a very serious countenance, and with a less friendly look than he had ever before given him, whether he knew any thing of Mr. Dowling's having seen any of the persons who were present at the duel between Jones and another gentleman.

There is nothing so dangerous as a question which comes by surprise on a man whose business it is to conceal truth or to defend falshood. For which reason, those worthy personages, whose noble office it is to save the lives of their fellow-creatures at the Old Bailey, take the utmost care, by frequent previous examinations, to divine every question which may be asked their clients on the day of trial, that they may be supplied with proper and ready answers, which the most fertile invention cannot supply in an instant. Besides the sudden and violent impulse on the blood occasioned by these surprises, causes frequently such an alteration in the countenance,

And fuch, indeed, were the alterations which the countenance of Bifil underwent from this sudden question, that we can scarce blame the eagerness of Mrs. Miller, who immediately cried out, Guilty, upon my honour! Guilty, upon my foul!

Mr. Allworthy sharply rebuked her for this impetuofity; and then turning to Blifil, who seemed sinking into the earth, he said, 'Why do you hesitate, Sir, at giving me an answer? You certainly must have employed him; for he would not of his own accord, I believe, have undertaken such an errand, and especially

without acquainting me.'

Blifil then answered, 'I own, Sir, I have been guilty of an offence; yet may I hope your pardon.'—' My pardon!' said Allworthy very angrily.—' Nay, Sir, answered Blifil, I knew you would be offended; yet surely my dear uncle will forgive the effects of the most amiable of human weaknesses. Compassion for those who do not deserve it, I own, is a crime; and yet it is a crime from which you yourself are not entirely free. I know I have been guilty of it in more than one instance to this very man; and I will own I did send Mr. Dowling, not on a vain and fruitless inquiry, but to discover the witnesses, and to endeavour to soften their evidence. This, Sir, is the truth; which though I intended to conceal from you, I will not deny.

'I confess, said Nightingale, this is the light in which it appeared to me from the gentleman's beha-

viour.'

'Now, Madam, faid Allworthy, I believe you will once in your life own you have entertained a wrong suspicion, and are not so angry with my nephew as you was.'

Mrs. Miller was filent: for though she could not so hastily be pleased with Blisil, whom she looked upon to have been the ruin of Jones, yet, in this particular instance, he had imposed upon her as well as the rest; so entirely had the devil stood his friend. And, indeed, I

look upon the vulgar observation, 'That the devil often deserts his friends, and leaves them in the lurch,' to be a great abuse on that gentleman's character. Perhaps he may sometimes desert those who are only his cup acquaintance; or who, at most, are but half his; but he generally stands by those who are thoroughly his servants, and helps them off in all extremities, till their bargain expires.

As a conquered rebellion strengthens a government, or as health is more perfectly established by recovery from some diseases, so anger, when removed, often gives new life to affection. This was the case of Mr. Allworthy; for Bliss having wiped off the greater suspicion, the lesser, which had been raised by Square's letter, sunk of course, and was forgotten; and Thwackum, with whom he was greatly offended, bore alone all the reflections which Square had cast on the enemies of Jones.

As for that young man, the refentment of Mr. All-worthy began more and more to abate towards him. He told Blifil, he did not only forgive the extraordinary efforts of his good-nature, but would give him the pleafure of following his example. Then turning to Mrs. Miller with a fmile, which would have become an angel, he cried, 'What fay you, Madam; shall we take a hackney coach, and all of us together pay a visit to your friend? I promise you, it is not the first visit I

have made in a prison.'

Every reader, I believe, will be able to answer for the worthy woman; but they must have a great deal of good-nature, and be well acquainted with friendship, who can feel what she felt on this occasion. Few, I hope, are capable of feeling what now passed in the mind of Bliss; but those who are, will acknowledge, that it was impossible for him to raise any objection to this visit. Fortune, however, or the gentleman lately mentioned above, stood his friend, and prevented his undergoing so great a shock; for, at the very instant when the coach was sent for, Partridge arrived, and having called Mrs. Miller from the company, ac-

quainted her with the dreadful accident lately come to light; and hearing Mr. Allworthy's intention, begged her to find some means of stopping him; 'For, says he, the matter must at all hazards be kept a secret from him: and if he should now go, he will find Mr. Jones and his mother, who arrived just as I lest him, lamenting over one another the horrid crime they have igno-

rantly committed.'

The poor woman, who was almost deprived of her fenses at this dreadful news, was never less capable of invention than at present. However, as women are much readier at this than men, she bethought herself of an excuse; and returning to Mr. Allworthy, said, I am fure, Sir, you will be furprized at hearing any objection from me to the kind propotal you just now made; and yet I am afraid of the consequence of it. if carried immediately into execution. You must imagine, Sir, that all the calamities which have lately befallen this poor young fellow must have thrown him into the most violent dejection of spirits; and now, Sir, should we all on a sudden fling him into such a violent fit of joy, as I know your presence will occasion, it may, I am afraid, produce some fatal mischief; especially as his fervant, who is without, tells me he is very far from being well.'

'Is his fervant without? cries Allworthy; pray call him hither. I will ask him some questions concerning

his mafter.

Partridge was at first asraid to appear before Mr. Allworthy; but was at length persuaded, after Mrs. Miller, who had often heard his whole story from his own

mouth, had promised to introduce him.

Allworthy recollected Partridge the moment he came into the room, though many years had passed since he had seen him. Mrs. Miller, therefore, might have spared here a formal oration, in which, indeed, she was something prolix: for the reader, I believe, may have observed already, that the good woman among other

Y 3

things, had a tongue always ready for the service of her

friends.

'And are you, said Allworthy to Partridge, the servant of Mr. Jones?'—'I can't say, Sir, answered he, that I am regularly a servant; but I live with him, an't please your honour, at present. Non sum qualis

eram, as your honour very well knows."

Mr. Allworthy then asked him many questions concerning Jones, as to his health, and other matters; to all which Partridge answered, without having the least regard to what was, but considered only what he would have things appear; for a strict adherence to truth was not among the articles of this fellow's morality, or his religion.

During this dialogue, Mr. Nightingale took his leave, and prefently after Mrs. Miller left the room, when Allworthy likewise dispatched Blifil; for he imagined that Partridge when alone with him, would be more explicit than before company. They were no sooner left in private together, than Allworthy began, as in

the following chapter.

CHAP. VI.

In which the History is farther continued.

SURE, friend, said the good man, you are the strangest of all human beings: not only to have suffered, as you have formerly, for obstinately persisting in a falshood, but to persist in it thus to the last, and to pass thus upon the world for the servant of your own son! What interest can you have in all this? What can be your motive?

I see, Sir, said Partridge, falling down upon his knees, that your honour is prepossessed against me, and resolved not to believe any thing I say; and therefore what signifies my protestations? But yet there is One above, who knows that I am not the father of this

young man."

"How! faid Allworthy, will you yet deny what you was formerly convicted of upon such unanswerable, such manisest evidence? Nay, what a confirmation is your

being now found with this very man, of all which twenty years ago appeared against you? I thought you had left the country; nay, I thought you had been long fince dead. In what manner did you know any thing of this young man? Where did you meet with him, unless you had kept some correspondence together? Do not deny this; for I promise you, it will greatly raise your son in my opinion, to find that he hath such a sense of filial duty, as privately to support his father for so many years.

' If your honour will have patience to hear me, faid Partridge, I will tell you all.'-Being bid go on, he proceeded thus :--- When your honour conceived that displeasure against me, it ended in my ruin soon after; for I loft my little school; and the minister thinking, I suppose, it would be agreeable to your honour, turned me out from the office of clerk; so that I had nothing to trust to but the barber's shop, which in a country place like that is a poor livelihood; and when my wife died, (for till that time I received a pension of twelve pounds a year from an unknown hand; which, indeed, I believe was your honour's own, for nobody that ever I heard of doth these things besides;) but, as I was faying, when she died, this pension for sook me; so that now, as I owed two or three small debts, which began to be troublesome to me, particularly one which an attorney brought up by law charges from fifteen shillings to near thirty pounds*; and as I found all my usual means of living had forfook me, I packed up my little all as well as I could, and went off.'

The first place I came to was Salisbury, where I got into the service of a gentleman belonging to the law,

* This is a fact which I knew happen to a poor clergyman in Dorsetshire, by the villainy of an attorney; who, not contented with the exorbitant costs to which the poor man was put by a fingle action, brought afterwards another action on the judgment, as it was called. A method frequently used to oppress the poor, and bring money into the pockets of attornies, to the great scandal of the law, of the nation, of christianity, and even of human nature itself.

and one of the best gentlemen that ever I knew; for he was not only good to me, but I knew a thousand good and charitable acts which he did while I staid with him; and I have known him often refuse business, because it was paltry and oppressive.'- You need not be so particular, faid Allworthy; I know this gentleman, and a very worthy man he is, and an honour to his profeffion.'- Well, Sir, continued Partridge, from hence I removed to Lymington, where I was above three years in the service of another lawyer, who was likewise a very good fort of man, and, to be fure, one of the merriest gentlemen in England. Well, Sir, at the end of the three years I fet up a little school, and was likely to, do well again, had it not been for a most unlucky accident. Here I kept a pig; and one day, as ill-fortune would have it, this pig broke out, and did a trespass, I think they call it, in a garden belonging to one of my neighbours, who was a proud, revengeful man, and employed a lawyer, one -- one -- I can't think of his name; but he fent for a writ against me, and had me to fize. When I came there, Lord have mercy upon me! to hear what the counsellor faid. There was one that told my lord a parcel of the confoundedest lies about me; he said, that I used to drive my hogs into other folks gardens, and a great deal more; and at last he said, he hoped I had at last brought my hogs to a fair market. fure, one would have thought that, instead of being owner only of one poor, little pig, I had been the greatest hogmerchant in England. Well---'- Pray, faid Allworthy, do not be to particular I have heard nothing of your fon yet.'- O it was a great many years, answered Partridge, before I saw my son, as you are pleased to call him. I went over to Ireland after this, and taught school at Cork, (for that one fuit ruined me again, and I lay seven years in Winchester goal.)'- Well, said Allworthy, pass that over till you return to England.'- Then, Sir, said he, it was about a half a year ago that I landed at Briftol, where I staid some time, and not finding it do there, and hearing of a place between that and

Gloucester, where the barber was just dead, I went thither, and there I had been about two months when Mr.
Jones came thither.'—' He then gave Allworthy a very
particular account of their first meeting, and of every
thing, as well as he could remember, which had happened from that day to this; frequently interlarding his
story with panegyrics on Jones; and not forgetting to
infinuate the great love and respect which he had for
Allworthy. He concluded with saying, 'Now Sir, I have
told your honour the whole truth:' and then repeating
a most solemn protestation, that he was no more the father of Jones than of the Pope of Rome; and imprecated the most bitter curses on his head, if he did not speak
truth.'

What am I to think of this matter? cries Allworthy. For what purpose should you so strongly deny a fact, which I think it would be rather your interest to own? Nay, Sir, answered Partridge, (for he could hold no longer,) if your honour will not believe me, you are like soon to have satisfaction enough. I wish you had mistaken the mother of this young man, as well as you have his father. And now being asked what he meant, with all the symptoms of horror, both in his voice and countenance, he told Allworthy the whole story, which he had a little before expressed such a defire to Mrs. Miller to conceal from him.

Allworthy was almost as much shocked at this discovery, as Partridge himself had been while he related it.

Good Heavens! says he, in what miserable distresses do vice and imprudence involve men! How much beyond our designs are the effects of wickedness sometimes carried! He had scarce uttered these words, when Mrs. Waters came hastily and abruptly into the room. Partridge no sooner saw her, than he cried, Here, Sir, here is the very woman herself. This is the unfortunate mother of Mr. Jones: I am sure she will acquit me before your honour. Pray Madam—'

Mrs. Waters, without paying any regard to what Partridge faid, and almost without taking any notice of him, advanced to Mr. Allworthy.—'I believe, Sir, it is so long fince I had the honour of seeing you, that you do not recollect me.'—'Indeed, answered Allworthy, you are so very much altered, on many accounts, that had not this man already acquainted me who you are, I should not have immediately called you to my remembrance. Have you, Madam, any particular business which brings you to me?' Allworthy spoke this with great reserve; for the reader may easily believe he was not well pleased with the conduct of this lady; neither with what he had formerly heard, nor with what Partridge had now delivered.

Mrs. Waters answered, 'Indeed, Sir, I have very particular business with you; and it is such as I can i npart only to yourself. I must defire, therefore, the fivour of a word with you alone; for I assure you, what

I have to tell you is of the utmost importance.

Partridge was then ordered to withdraw; but before he went, he begged the lady to satisfy Mr. Allworthy that he was perfectly innocent. To which she answered, You need be under no apprehension, Sir; I shall satisfy Mr. Allworthy very perfectly of that matter.

Then Partridge withdrew; and that passed between Mr. Allworthy and Mrs. Waters which is written in

the next chapter.

CHAP. VII.

Continuation of the History.

MRS. Waters remaining a few moments filent, Mr. Allworthy could not refrain from faying, 'I am forry, Madam, to perceive, by what I have fince heard, that you have made so very ill a use—'—' Mr. Allworthy, fays she, interrupting him, I know I have faults, but ingratitude to you is not one of them. I never can nor shall forget your goodness, which I swn I have very little deserved; but be pleased to wave all upbraiding me at present, as I have so important an affair to communicate to you concerning this young man, to whom you have given my maiden name of Jones.'

' Have I then, faid Allworthy, ignorantly punished

an innocent man, in the person of him who hath just left us? Was he not the father of the child?'- Indeed he was not, said Mrs. Waters. You may be pleased to remember, Sir, I formerly told you, you should one day know; and I acknowledge myself to have been guilty of a cruel neglect, in not having discovered it to you before. Indeed, I little knew how necessary it was.' - Well, Madam, faid Allworthy, be pleased to proceed.'- You must remember, Sir, said she, a young fellow whose name was Summer.'- 'Very well, cries Allworthy; he was the fon of a clergyman of great learning and virtue, for whom I had the highest friendship.'- 'So it appeared, Sir, answered she; for I believe you bred the young man up, and maintained him at the university; where, I think, he had finished his Audies, when he came to refide at your house: a finer man, I must say, the sun never shone upon; for, befides the handsomest person I ever saw, he was so genteel, and had so much wit and good breeding.'- 'Poor gentleman! faid Allworthy; he was, indeed, untimely fnatched away; and little did I think he had any fins of this kind to answer for; for I plainly perceive you are going to tell me, he was the father of your child.'

'Indeed, Sir, answered she, he was not.'- 'How? said Allworthy, to what then tends all this preface?'- 'To a ftory, Sir, faid she, which I am concerned falls to my lot to unfold to you. O, Sir, prepare to hear something which will furprise you, will grieve you.'- Speak faid Allworthy; I am conscious of no crime, and cannot be afraid to hear.'- Sir, faid she, that Mr. Summer, the fon of your friend, educated at your expence, who, after living a year in the house, as if he had been your own fon, died there of the small-pox, was tenderly lamented by you, and buried as if he had been your own; that Summer, Sir, was the father of this child.'- ' How, faid Allworthy, you contradict yourfelf.'- 'That I do not, answered she; he was indeed the father of this child, but not by me.'- Take care, Madam, faid Allworthy, do not, to shun the imputation of any crime, be guilty

of falshood. Remember there is one from whom you can conceal nothing, and before whose tribunal falshood will only aggravate your guilt.'- 'Indeed, Sir, fays fhe, I am not his mother; nor would I now think myfelf so for the world!'- 'I know your reason, said Allworthy; and shall rejoice as much as you, to find it otherwife; yet you must remember, you yourself confessed it before me.'- So far, what I confessed, said she, was true, that these hands conveyed the infant to your bed! conveyed it thither at the command of its mother: at her command I afterwards owned it, and thought myself, by her generosity, nobly rewarded, both for my fecrecy and my shame.'- Who could this woman be?' faid Allworthy .- Indeed, I tremble to name her,' answered Mrs. Waters .- ' By all this preparation, I am to guess that she was a relation of mine,' cried he. - Indeed the was a near one.' At which words Allworthy farted, and she continued. 'You had a sister, Sir.'- 'A fifter!' repeated he, looking aghaft.'- 'As there is truth in heaven, cries she, your fister was the mother of that child you found between your fleets.'-'Can it be possible? cries he, good heavens!'- 'Have patience, Sir, said Mrs. Waters, and I will unfold to you the whole story. Just after your departure for London, Miss Bridget came one day to the house of my mother. She was pleased to say, she had heard an extraordinary character of me, for my learning and fuperior. understanding to all the young women there; so she was pleased to say. She then bid me come to her to the great house; where, when I attended, she employed me to read to her. She expressed great satisfaction in my reading, shewed great kindness to me, and made me many presents. At last she began to catechise me on the subject of secrecy, to which I gave her such satisfactory answers, that, at last, having locked the door of her room, fhe took me into her closet, and then locking that door likewise, she said, she should convince me of the vast reliance she had on my integrity, by communicating a secret in which her honour, and confequently her life, was

She then stopt; and, after a silence of a few minutes, during which the often wiped her eyes, the enquired of me, if I thought my mother might safely be confided in. I answered, I would flake my life on her fidelity. She then imparted to me the great secret which laboured in her breaft, and which, I believe, was delivered with more pains than she afterwards suffered in childbirth. It was then contrived, that my mother and myself only should attend at the time, and that Mrs. Wilkins should be fent out of the way, as she accordingly was, to the very farthest part of Dorsetshire, to inquire the character of a fervant; for the lady had turned away her own maid near three months before; during all which time I officiated about her person upon trial, as the faid; though, as the afterwards declared, I was not sufficiently handy for the place. This, and many other fuch things, which she used to say of me, were all thrown out to prevent any fuspicion which Wilkins might hereafter have when I was to own the child; for the thought it could never be believed the would venture to hurt a young woman with whom she had entrusted fuch a fecret, You may be affured, Sir, I was well paid for all these affronts, which, together with being informed with the occasion of them, very well contented me. Indeed, the lady had a greater fuspicion of Mrs. Wilkins than of any other person: not that she had the least aversion to the gentlewoman, but she thought her incapable of keeping a fecret, especially from you, Sir; for I have often heard Miss Bridget say, that if Mrs. Wilkins had committed a murder, she believed she would acquaint you with it. At last, the expected day came; and Mrs. Wilkins, who had been kept a week in readiness, and put off from time to time, upon some pretence or other, that she might not return too soon, was dispatched. Then the child was born, in the prefence only of myself and my mother, and was by my mother conveyed to her own house, where it was privately kept by her till the evening of your return; when I, by the command of Miss Bridget, conveyed it into VOL. III.

the bed where you found it: and all suspicions were afterwards laid asleep by the artful conduct of your sister, in pretending ill will to the boy, and that any regard she shewed him was out of mere complaisance to you.'

Mrs. Waters then made many protestations of the truth of this story, and concluded by saying, 'Thus, Sir, you have at last discovered your nephew; for so, I am sure, you will hereafter think him; and I question not, but he will be both an honour and a comtort to you,

under that appellation.'

' I need not, Madam, faid Allworthy, express my aftonishment at what you have told me; and yet, furely you would not, and could not, have put together fo many circumstances to evidence an untruth. I confess, I recollect some passages relating to that Summer, which formerly gave me a conceit, that my fifter had some liking to him. I mentioned it to her: for I had fuch a regard to the young man, as well on his own account, as on his father's, that I should willingly have consented to a match between them; but she expressed the highest disdain of my unkind suspicion, as she called it; so that I never spoke more on the subject. Good Heavens! Well! the Lord disposeth all things. Yet, sure it was a most unjustifiable conduct in my fister, to carry this fecret with her out of the world !'- I promise you, Sir, said Mrs. Waters, she always professed a contrary intention; and frequently told me, the intended one day to communicate it to you, she said, indeed, she was highly rejoiced that her plot had succeeded so well; and that you had, of your own accord, taken such a fancy to the child, that it was yet unnecessary to make any express declaration. Oh! Sir, had that lady lived to have seen this poor young man turned like a vagabond from your house; nay, Sir, could she have lived to hear that you had yourfelf employed a lawyer to profecute him for a murder of which he was not guilty !- Forgive me, Mr. Allworthy, I must say it was unkind. Indeed you have been abused; he never deserved it of you!'- Indeed, Madam, faid Allworthy, I have been abused by the per-

267

fon, whoever he was, that told you so.'—' Nay, Sir, said she, I would not be mistaken, I did not presume to say you were guilty of any wrong. The gentleman who came to me, proposed no such matter: he only said, taking me for Mr. Fitzpatrick's wife, that if Mr. Jones had murdered my husband, I should be affisted with any money I wanted to carry on the prosecution, by a very worthy gentleman, who, he said, was well apprised what a villain I had to deal with. It was by this man I found out who Mr. Jones was; and this man, whose name is Dowling, Mr. Jones tells me, is your steward. I discovered his name by a very odd accident; for he himself refused to tell it me; but Partridge, who met him at my lodgings, the second time he came, knew him formerly at Salisbury.'

And did this Mr. Dowling, fays Allworthy, with great aftonishment in his countenance, tell you that I would assist in the prosecution! — No, Sir, answered she; I will not charge him wrongfully. He said, I should be affisted; but he mentioned no name. Yet, you must pardon me, Sir, if from circumstances, I thought it could be no other. — Indeed, Madam, says Allworthy, from circumstances, I am too well convinced it was another. Good Heaven! by what wonderful means is the blackest and deepest villany sometimes discovered! Shall I beg you, Madam, to stay till the person you have mentioned comes? for I expect him every minute; nay,

he may be, perhaps, already in the house.'

Allworthy then stept to the door, in order to call a fervant, when in came, not Mr. Dowling, but the gentleman who will be seen in the next chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

Farther Continuation.

THE gentleman who now arrived was no other than Mr. Western. He no sooner saw Allworthy, than, without considering in the least the presence of Mrs. Waters, he began to vociferate in the following manner: Fine doings at my house! A rare kettle of fish I have discovered at last! Who the devil would be plagued

with a daughter?'-'What's the matter, neighbour?' faid Allworthy .- 'Matter enough, answered Western; when I thought she was a just coming to; nay, when she had in a manner promised me to do as I would ha' her, and when I was a hoped to have had nothing more to do than to have fent for the lawyer, and finished all; what do you think I have found out? that the little bhath been playing tricks with me all the while, and carrying on a correspondence with that bastard of yours. Sitter Western, whom I have quarrelled with upon her account, fent me word o't, and I ordered her pockets to be fearched when she was afleep, and here I have got un figned with the fon of a whore's own name. I have not had patience to read half o't, for 'tis longer than one of Parson Supple's sermons; but I find plainly, it is all about love; and indeed, what should it be else? I have packed her up in chamber again, and to-morrow morning down the goes into the country, unless the confents to be married directly, and there she shall live in a garret upon bread and water all her days; and the fooner such a b- breaks her heart, the better: though d-n her, that I believe is too tough; the will live long enough to plague me.'- 'Mr. Western, answered Allworthy, you know I have always protested against force, and you yourfelf confented that none should be used.'-Aye, cries he, that was only upon condition that she would consent without. What the devil and Doctor Faustus! shan't I do what I will with my own daughter, especially when I defire nothing but her own good ?'-Well, neighbour, answered Allworthy, if you will give me leave, I will undertake once to argue with the young lady.'- Will you? faid Western; why, that is kind now, and neighbourly; and may hap you will do more than I have been able to do with her; for I promife you, the hath a very good opinion of you.'- Well, Sir, faid Allworthy, if you will go home and release the young lady from her captivity, I will wait upon her within this half hour.' - But suppose, said Western, the thould run away with un in the meantime? for Law-

yer Dowling tells me, there is no hopes of hanging the fellow at last; for that the man is alive and like to do well, and that he thinks Jones will be out of prison again presently.'- 'How! said Allworthy, what did you employ him then to enquire, or to do any thing in that matter?'- 'Not I, answered Western : he mentioned it to me just now of his own accord.'- Just now! cries Allworthy; why, where did you fee him then? I want much to fee Mr. Dowling.'- Why, you may fee un an you will presently at my lodgings; for there is to be a meeting of lawyers there this morning about a mortgage. Icod! I shall lose two or three thoufand pounds, I believe, by that honelt gentleman, Mr. Nightingale.'- Well, Sir, faid Allworthy, I will be with you within the half hour.'- 'And do, for once, cries the squire, take a fool's advice; never think of deal. ing with her by gentle methods; take my word for it, those will-never do; I have tried um long enough. She must be frightened into it; there is no other way. Tell her, I'm her father; and of the horrid fin of disobedience, and of the dreadful punishment of it in t'other world; and then tell her about being locked up all her life in a garret in this, and being kept only on bread and water.'- 'I will do all I can, faid Allworthy; for I promise you, there is nothing I wish for more, than an al. liance with this amiable creature.'- ' Nay, the girl is well enough for matter o'that, cries the iquire: a man may go farther, and meet with worse meat; that I may declare o'her, thof she be my own daughter. And if she will but be obedient to me, there is n'arrow a father within a hundred miles o' the place, that loves a daughter better than I do : but I fee you are busy with the lady here ; fo I will go home and expect you, and so your humble fervant.'

As foon as Mr. Western was gone, Mrs. Waters said, I see, Sir, the squire hath not the least remembrance of my face. I believe, Mr. Allworthy, you would not have known me neither. I am very considerably altered since that day when you so kindly gave me that advice,

270

which I had been happy had I followed.'- Indeed, Madam, cries Allworthy, it gave me great concern when I first heard the contrary.'- Indeed, Sir, fays she, I was ruined by a very deep scheme of villany; which, if you knew, though I pretend not to think it would juftify me in your opinion, it would, at least, mitigate my offence, and induce you to pity me: you are not now at leisure to hear my whole story; but this I assure you, I was betrayed by the most solemn promises of marriage: nay, in the eye of Heaven, I was married to him: for, after much reading on the fubject, I am convinced that particular ceremonies are only requifite to give a legal fanction to marriage, and have only a worldly use, in giving a woman the privileges of a wife but that she who lives conftant to one man, after a solemn private affiance, whatever the world may call her, hath little to charge on her own conscience.'- 'I am forry Madam, faid Allworthy, you made so ill an use of your learning. Indeed, it would have been well that you had been posselfed of much more, or had remained in a flate of ignorance. And yet, Madam, I am afraid you have more than this fin to answer for.'- During his life, answered the, which was above a dozen years, I most folemnly affure you I had not. And confider, Sir, on my behalf, what is in the power of a woman, fript of her reputation, and left destitute; whether the good-natured world will fuffer fuch a stray sheep to return to the road of virtue, even if she was never so desirous. I protest, then, I would have chose it, had it been in my power; but necessity drove me into the arms of Captain Waters, with whom, though still unmarried, I lived as a wife for many years, and went by his name, I parted with this gentleman at Worcester, on his march against the rebels, and it was then I accidentally met with Mr. Jones, who rescued me from the hands of a villain. Indeed, he is the worthiest of men. No young gentleman of his age, is, I believe, freer from vice, and few have the twentieth part of his virtues: nay, whatever vices be hath had, I am firmly perfuaded he hath now taken a

resolution to abandon them.'—'I hope he hath, cries Allworthy, and I hope he will preserve that resolution. I must say, I have still the same hope with regard to yourself. The world, I do agree, are apt to be too unmerciful on these occasions; yet, time and perseverance will get the better of this their disinclination, as I may call it, to pity; for though they are not, like Heaven, ready to receive a penitent sinner, yet a continued repentance will, at length, obtain mercy even with the world. This you may be assured of Mrs. Waters, that whenever I find you are sincere in such good intentions, you shall want no assistance in my power to make them effectual.'

Mrs. Waters fell now upon her knees before him; and, in a flood of tears, made him many most passionate acknowledgments of his goodness; which, as she truly said, savoured more of the divine than human nature.

Allworthy raised her up, and spoke in the most tender manner, making use of every expression which his invention could fuggeft to comfort her, when he was interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Dowling; who, upon his first entrance, seeing Mrs. Waters, started, and appeared in some confusion; from which he soon recovered himfelf, as well as he could, and then faid he was in the utmost haste to attend countel at Mr. Western's lodgings; but, however, thought it his duty to call and acquaint him with the opinion of counsel upon the case which he had before told him; which was, that the conversion of the monies, in that case, could not be questioned in a criminal cause; but that an action of trover might be brought, and if it appeared to the jury, to be the monies of plaintiff, that plaintiff would recover a verdict for the value.

Allworthy, without making any answer to this, bolted the door; and then advancing with a stern look to Dowling, he said, 'Whatever be your haste, Sir, I must first receive an answer to some questions. Do you know this lady?'—'That lady, Sir?' answered Dowling, with

272

great hefitation. Allworthy then, with the most solemn voice, faid, Look you, Mr. Dowling, as you value my favour, or your continuance a moment lenger in my service, do not hesitate nor prevaricate; but answer faithfully and truly to every question I ask. Do you know this lady?'- 'Yes, Sir, faid Dowling, I have feen the lady.'- Where Sir?'- At her own lodgings.'-"Upon what business did you go thither, Sir, and who fent you?'- I went, Sir, to inquire, Sir, about Mr. Jones.'- And who fent you to inquire about him?'-Who, Sir? why, Sir, Mr. Blifil fent me.'- And what did you fay to the lady concerning that matter?'-Nay, Sir, it is impossible to recollect every word.'-Will you please, Madam, to assist the gentleman's memory?'- He told me, Sir, faid Mrs. Waters, that if Mr. Jones had murdered my husband, I should be affisted with any money I wanted, to carry on the profecution, by a very worthy gentleman, who was well apprifed what a villain I had to deal with. These, I can safely swear, were the very words he spoke.'- Were these the words, Sir?' faid Allworthy, 'I cannot charge my memory exactly, cries Dowling, but I believe I did speak to that purpose.'- 'And did Mr. Blifil order you to say so?'-I am fure, Sir, I should not have gone on my own accord, nor have willingly exceeded my authority in watters of this kind. If I faid fo, I must have so underflood Mr. Blifil's instructions.'- Look you, Mr. Dowling faid Allworthy, I promise you, before this lady, that whatever you have done in this affair, by Mr. Blifil's order, I will forgive, provided you now tell me firictly the trath: for I believe what you fay, that you would not have acted of your own accord, and without authority, in this matter. Mr. Blifil, then, likewise sent you to examine the two fellows at Aldersgate?'- 'He did, Sir.'- Well; and what instructions did he then give you? Recollect as well as you can; and tell me, as near as possible, the very words he used.'- Why, Sir, Mr. Blifil fent me to find out the persons who were eye witpeffes of this fight. He faid, he feared they might be

tampered with by Mr. Jones, or some of his friends. He faid, blood required blood; and that not only all who concealed a murderer, but those who omitted any thing in their power to bring him to justice, were sharers in his guilt. He faid, he found you was very defirous of having the villain brought to justice, though it was not proper you should appear in it.'- 'Did he so ?' faid Allworthy. 'Yes, Sir; cries Dowling: I should not, I am fure, have proceeded fuch lengths, for the fake of any other person living, but your worthip.'- What lengths, Sir?' faid Allworthy. 'Nay, Sir, cries Dowling, I would not have your worthip think I would, on any account be guilty of subornation of perjury; but there are two ways of delivering evidence. I told them, therefore, that if any offers should be made them on the other fide, they should refuse them; and that they might be affured they should lose nothing by being honest men, and telling the truth. I faid, we were told that Mr. Jones had affaulted the gentleman first, and that, if that was the truth, they should declare it; and I did give them fome hints, that they should be no lofers.'- 'I think you went lengths, indeed,' cries Allworthy. ' Nay, Sir, answered Dowling, I am sure I did not defire them to tell an untruth; nor should I have said what I did, unless it had been to oblige you.'- 'You would not have thought, I believe, fays Allworthy, to have obliged me, had you known that this Mr. Jones was my own nephew.'- I am fure, Sir, answered he, it did not become me to take any notice of what I thought you defired to conceal. '- How! cries' Allworthy, and did you know it then?'- Nay, Sir, answered Dowling, if your worship bids me speak the truth, I am sure I shall do it. Indeed, Sir, I did know it; for they were almost the last words which Madam Blifil ever spoke, which she mentioned to me, as I stood alone by her bedside, when she delivered me the letter I brought your worship from her.'- What letter?' cries Allworthy. 'The letter, Sir, answered Dowling, which I brought from Salisbury, and which I delivered into the hands of Mr. Blifil.'- O Heavens!

eries Allworthy. Well; and what were the words? What did my fifter fay to you?'- She took me by the hand, answered he, and, as she delivered me the letter, faid, I scarce know what I have written. Tell my brother, Mr. Jones is his nephew-He is my fon-blefs him!' fays she, and then fell backward, as if dying away. I presently called in the people, and she never spoke more to me, and died within a few minutes afterwards.' Allworthy flood a minute filent, lifting up his eyes; and then turning to Dowling, faid, ' How came you Sir, not to deliver me this message?'- Your worship, answered he, must remember that you was at that time ill in bed; and being in a violent hurry, as indeed, I always am, I delivered the letter and meffage to Mr. Blifil, who told me he would carry them both to you, which he hath fince told me he did, and that you worship, partly out of friendship to Mr. Jones, and partly out of regard to your fifter, would never have it mentioned; and did intend to conceal it from the world: and therefore, Sir, if you had not mentioned it to me first, I am certain I should never have thought it belonged to me to fay any thing of the matter, either to your worship, or any other perfon.

We have remarked somewhat already, that it is possible for a man to convey a lie in the words of truth. This was the case at present: for Bliss had in fact told Dowling what he now related; but had not imposed upon him, nor indeed had imagined that he was able so to do. In reality, the promites which Bliss had made to Dowling were the motives which had induced him to secrecy; and as he very plainly saw Bliss would not be able to keep them, he thought proper now to make this confession, which the promites of forgiveness, joined to the threats, the voice, the looks of Allworthy, and the discoveries he had made before, extorted from him, who was besides taken unawares, and had no time to consider of evasions.

Allworthy appeared well fatisfied with this relation; and having enjoined on Dowling strict filence as to what had passed, conducted that gentleman himself to the door, lest he should see Blissl, who was returned to his chamber, where he exulted in the thoughts of his last deceit on his uncle, and little suspected what had since passed below stairs.

As Allworthy was returning to his room he met Mrs. Miller in the entry; who, with a face all pale and full of terror, faid to him, 'Ol Sir, I find this wicked woman hath been with you, and you know all: yet do not, on this account, abandon the poor young man. Confider, Sir, he was ignorant it was his own mother; and the discovery itself will, most probably, break his heart, without your unkindness.'

'Madam, fays Allworthy, I am under fuch an aftonishment at what I have heard, that I am really unable to satisfy you; but come with me into my room. Indeed, Mrs. Miller I have made surprising discoveries, and

you shall soon know them.'

Allworthy going up to Mrs. Waters, took her by the hand, and then turning to Mrs. Miller, faid, 'What reward shall I bestow upon this gentlewoman, for the services she hath done me? O! Mrs. Miller, you have a thousand times heard me call the young man to whom you are so faithful a friend, my son. Little did I then think he was indeed related to me at all. Your friend, Madam, is my pephew; he is the brother of that wicked viper whom I have so long nourished in my bosom! She will herself tell you the whole story, and how the youth came to pass for her son. Indeed, Mrs. Miller, I am convinced that he hath been wronged, and that I have been abused; abused by one whom you too justly suspected of being a villain. He is, in truth, the worst of villains!'

The joy which Mrs. Miller now felt, bereft her of the power of speech, and might, perhaps, have deprived her of her senses, if not of lite, had not a friendly shower of tears come seasonably to her relief. At length, recovering so far from her transport as to be able to speak, she cried, And is my dear Mr. Jones then your nephew, Sir; and

not the son of this lady? and are your eyes opened to him at last: and shall I live to see him as happy as he deserves!'—' He certainly is my nephew, says Allworthy, and I hope all the rest.'—' And is this dear good woman the person, cries she, to whom all this discovery is owing?'—' She is indeed, says Allworthy.'—' Why then cried Mrs. Miller upon her knees, heaven shower down its choicest blessings upon her head, and for this one good action forgive her all her sins, be they never so many.'

Mrs. Waters then informed them, that she believed Jones would very shortly be released; for that the surgeon was gone, in company with a nobleman, to the justice who committed him, in order to certify that Mr. Fitzpatrick was out of all manner of danger, and to pro-

cure the prisoner his liberty.

Allworthy said, he should be glad to find his nephew there at his return home: but that he was then obliged to go on some business of consequence. He then called to a servant to setch him a chair, and presently left the

two ladies together.

Mr. Bilfil hearing the chair ordered, came down stairs to attend upon his uncle; for he never was deficient in such acts of duty. He asked his uncle if he was going out? which is a civil way of asking a man where he is going: to which the other making no answer, he again defired to know when he would be pleased to return? Allworthy made no answer to this neither, till he was getting into his chair, and then turning about, he said, Harkee, Sir, do you find out, before my return, the letter which your mother sent me on her death-bed. —Allworthy then departed, and lest Blifil in a situation to be envied only by a man who is just going to be hanged.

CHAP. IX.

A farther Continuation.

A LLWORTHY took an opportunity, whilf he was in the chair, of reading the letter from Jones to Sophia, which Western delivered him; and there

were some expressions in it concerning himself, which drew tears from his eyes. At length he arrived at Mr.

Western's, and was introduced to Sophia.

When the first ceremonies were past, and the gentleman and lady had taken their chairs, a silence of some minutes ensued; during which, the latter, who had been prepared for the visit by her father, sat playing with her fan, and had every mark of confusion both in her countenance and behaviour. At length, Allworthy, who was himself a little disconcerted, began thus:—

I am afraid, Miss Western, my family hath been the occasion of giving you some uneasiness; to which I fear, I have innocently become more instrumental than I intended. Be affured, Madam, had I at first known how disagreeable the proposals had been, I should not have suffered you to have been so long persecuted. I hope, therefore, you will not think the design of this visit is to trouble you with any farther solicitations of that kind,

but entirely to relieve you from them.'

Sir, faid Sophia, with a little modest hesitation. this behaviour is most kind and generous, and such as I could expect only from Mr. Allworthy; but as you have been so kind to mention this matter, you will pardon me for faying, it hath, indeed, given me great uneafiness; and hath been the occasion of my suffering much cruel treatment from a father, who was, till that unhappy affair, the tenderest and fondest of all parents. I am convinced, Sir, you are too good and generous to refent my refusal of your nephew. Our inclinations are not in our own power; and whatever may be his merit, I cannot force them in his favour.'- 'I affure you, most amiable young lady, said Allworthy, I am capable of no fuch resentment, had the person been my own fon, and had I entertained the highest esteem for him. For you fay truly, Madam, we cannot force our inclinations, much less can they be directed by another.'- 'Oh! Sir, answered Sophia, every word you speak proves you to deserve that good, that great, that benevolent character, the whole world allows you. I

Vol. III.

affure you, Sir, nothing less than the certain prospect of future mifery could have made me refift the commands of my father.'- 'I fincerely believe you, Madam, replied Allworthy; and I heartily congratulate you on your prudent forefight, fince, by so justifiable a resistance, you have avoided misery indeed.'- You speak, now, Mr. Allworthy, cries she, with a delicacy few men are capable of feeling; but furely, in my opinion, to lead our lives with one to whom we are indifferent, must be a state of wretchedness. Perhaps that wretchedness would be even increased by a sense of the merits of the object to whom we cannot give our affections. If I had married Mr. Blifil-'- Pardon my interrupting you, Madam, answered Allworthy, but I cannot bear the Supposition. Believe me, Miss Western, I rejoice from my heart-I rejoice in your escape. I have discovered the wretch for whom you have fuffered all this cruel violence from your father, to be a villain!'- 'How, Sir! cries Sophia, you must believe this surprises me!'- 'It hath surprised me, Madam, answered Allworthy; and fo it will the world: but I have acquainted you with the real truth.'- 'Nothing but truth, fays Sophia, can, I am convinced, come from the lips of Mr. Allworthy. Yet, Sir, such sudden, such unexpected news-Discovered, you fay-may villany be ever fo !'- 'You will foon enough hear the story, cries Allworthy; at present, let us not mention so detested a name-I have another matter of a very serious nature to propose. O! Miss Western, I know your vast worth, nor can I so easily part with the ambition of being allied to it. I have a near relation, Madam, a young man whose character is, I am convinced, the very opposite to that of this wretch, and whose fortune I will make equal to what his was to have been. Could I, Madam, hope you would admit a visit from him?'-Sophia, after a minute's filence, anfwered, ' I will deal with the utmost fincerity with Mr. Allworthy. His character, and the obligation I have just received from him, demand it. I have determined at present to listen to no such proposals from any person

My only defire is, to be restored to the affection of my father, and to be again the mistress of his family. This, Sir, I hope to owe to your good offices. Let me beseech you, let me conjure you, by all the goodness which I, and all who know you, have experienced; do not, the very moment when you have released me from one persecution, do not engage me in another as miserable and as fruitless.'- 'Indeed, Miss Western, replied Allworthy, I am capable of no fuch conduct; and if this be your resolution, he must submit to the disappointment whatever torments he may suffer under it.'-I must smile now, Mr. Allworthy, answered Sophia, when you mention the torments of a man whom I do not know, and who can consequently have so little acquaintance with me.'- Pardon me, dear young lady, cries Allworthy; I begin now to be afraid he hath had too much acquaintance for the repose of his future days; fince, if ever man was capable of a fincere, violent, and noble passion, such, I am convinced, is my unhappy nephew's for Miss Western.'- 'A nephew of yours! Mr. Allworthy, answered Sophia. It is surely strange I never heard of him before!'- Indeed, Madam, cries Allworthy, it is only the circumstance of his being my nephew to which you are a stranger, and which, till this day, was a fecret to me. Mr. Jones, who has long loved you, he! he is my nephew!'- 'Mr. Jones your nephew, Sir! cries Sophia, can it be poffible!'-'He is, indeed, Madam, answered Allworthy: he is my own fifter's fon-as fuch I shall always own him; nor am I ashamed of owning him. I am much more ashamed of my past behaviour to him; but I was as ignorant of his merit as of his birth. Indeed, Miss Western, I have used him cruelly-indeed I have!' Here the good man wiped his eyes, and after a short pause proceeded- I never shall be able to reward him for his sufferings without your affistance. Believe me, most amiable young lady, I must have a great esteem for that offering which I make to your worth. I know he hath been guilty of faults; but there is great goodness of

heart at the bottom. Believe me, Madam, there is.'-Here he stopped, seeming to expect an answer, which he presently received from Sophia, after she had a little recovered herself from the hurry of spirits into which so strange and sudden information had thrown her: 'I fincerely with you joy, Sir, of a discovery in which you feem to have such satisfaction. I doubt not but you will have all the comfort you can promise yourself from it. The young gentleman hath certainly a thousand good qualities, which makes it impossible he should not behave well to fuch an uncle.'- I hope, Madam, faid Allworthy, he hath those good qualities which must make him a good husband. He must, I am sure, be of all men the most abandoned, if a lady of your merit should condescend—'- You must pardon me, Mr. Allworthy, answered Sophia. I cannot listen to a proposal of this kind. Mr. Jones, I am convinced, hath much merit, but I shall never receive Mr. Jones as one who is to be my husband: upon my honour, I never will.'-'Pardon me, Madam, cries Allworthy, if I am a little furprised, after what I have heard from Mr. Western-I hope the unhappy young man hath done nothing to forfeit your good opinion, if he had ever the honour to enjoy it. Perhaps he may have been misrepresented to you, as he was to me. The same villany may have injured him every where. He is no murderer, I affure you, as he hath been called.'- 'Mr. Allworthy, anfwered Sophia, I have told you my resolution. I wonder not at what my father hath told you; but whatever his apprehensions or fears have been, if I know my heart, I have given no occasion for them; fince it hath always been a fixed principle with me, never to have married without his confent. This is, I think, the duty of a child to a parent; and this, I hope, nothing could ever have prevailed with me to swerve from. I do not, indeed, conceive, that the authority of any parent can oblige us to marry in direct opposition to our inclinations. To avoid a force of this kind, which I had reafon to suspect, I left my father's house, and sought pro-

tection elsewhere. This is the truth of my flory; and if the world or my father carry my intentions any farther, my own conscience will acquit me.'- I hear you, Miss Western, cries Allworthy, with admiration. admire the justness of your sentiments; but surely there is more in this. I am cautious of offending you, young lady; but am I to look on all which I have hitherto heard or feen, as a dream only? And have you suffered fo much cruelty from your father on account of a man to whom you have been always absolutely indifferent?'- 'I beg, Mr. Allworthy, answered Sophia, you will not infift on my reasons: yes, I have suffered indeed! I will not, Mr. Allworthy, conceal-I will be very fincere with you-I own, I had a great opinion of Mr. Jones-I believe—I know I have suffered for my opinion— I have been treated cruelly by my aunt, as well as by my father; but that is now past—I beg I may not be farther pressed; for whatever hath been, my resolution is now fixed. Your nephew, Sir, hath many virtueshe hath great virtues, Mr. Allworthy. I question not but he will do you honour in the world, and make you happy.'- I wish I could make him so, Madam, replied Allworthy; but that I am convinced is only in your power. It is that conviction which hath made me so earnest a solicitor in his favour.'- You are deceived: indeed, Sir, you are deceived, faid Sophia. I hope not by him. It is sufficient to have deceived me. Mr. Allworthy, I must insist on being pressed no farther on this subject. I should be forry-nay, I will not injure him in your favour. I wish Mr. Jones very well. I fincerely wish him well; and I repeat it again to you, whatever demerit he may have to me, I am certain he hath many good qualities. I do not disown my former thoughts; but nothing can ever recal them. At present there is not a man upon earth whom I would more resolutely reject than Mr. Jones; nor would the addresses of Mr. Blifil himself be less agreeable to me.

Western had been long impatient for the event of this conference, and was just now arrived at the door to

listen; when having heard the last sentiments of his daughter's heart, he lost all temper, and bursting open the door in a rage, cried out, ' It is a lye, it is a d-n'd lye: it is all owing to that d-n'd rascal Jones; and if she could get at un, she'd ha' un any hour of the day.' Here Allworthy irterposed; and, addressing himself to the squire with some anger in his look, he said, 'Mr. Western, you have not kept your word with me. You promised to abstain from all violence.'-- Why so I did, cries Western, as long as it was possible; but to hear a wench telling such confounded lies. Zounds! doth she think if the can make vools of other volk, the can make one of me? No, no, I know her better than thee doft.' I am forry to tell you, Sir, answered Allworthy, it doth not appear by your behaviour to this young lady, that you know her at all. I alk pardon for what I fay; but I think our intimacy, your own desires, and the occasion, justify me. She is your daughter, Mr. Western, and I think she doth honour to your name. If I was capable of envy, I should sooner envy you on this account, than any other man whatever.'- Od-rabbit it, cries the fquire, I wish she was thine with all my heart-would foon be glad to be rid of the trouble o' her.'- Indeed, my good friend, answered Allworthy, you yourfelf are the cause of all the trouble you complain of. Place that confidence in the young lady which she so well deserves, and I am certain you will be the happiest father on earth.'- 'I confidence in her! cries the squire. 'Sblood! what confidence can I place with her, when she won't do as I wou'd ha' her? Let her gee but her confent to marry as I wou'd ha' her, and I'll place as much confidence in her as would'ft ha' me.'- You have no right, neighbour, answered Allworthy, to insist on any such consent. A negative voice your daughter allows you; and God and nature have thought proper to allow you no more.'- 'A negative voice! cries the squire: Aye, aye, I'll shew you what a negative voice I ha'. Go along, go into your chamber; go, you flubborn-.'-' Indeed, Mr. Western, said Allworthy, indeed, you use her cruellyI cannot bear to see this.—You shall, you must behave to her in a kinder manner. She deserves the best of treatment.'—'Yes, yes, said the squire; I know what she deserves: now she's gone, I'll shew you what she deserves—See here, Sir; here is a letter from my cousin, my Lady Bellaston, in which she is so kind to gee me to understand, that the fellow is got out of prison again; and here she advises me to take all the care I can o' the wench. Odzookers! neighbour Allworthy, you don't know what it is to govern a daughter!'

The squire ended his speech with some compliments to his own sagacity; and then Allworthy, after a formal presace, acquainted him with the whole discovery which he had made concerning Jones, with his anger to Bliss, and with every particular which hath been disclosed to the

reader in the preceding chapters.

Men over-violent in their dispositions, are, for the most part, as changeable in them. No sooner, then, was Western informed of Mr. Allworthy's intention to make Jones his heir, than he joined heartily with the uncle in every commendation of the nephew, and became as eager for her marriage with Jones, as he had before been to couple her to Bliss.

Here Mr. Allworthy was again forced to interpose, and to relate what had passed between him and Sophia;

at which he testified great surprise.

The squire was silent a moment, and looked wild with astonishment at this account. At last he cried out, 'Why, what can be the meaning of this, neighbour Allworthy? Vond o'un she was, that I'll be sworn to. Odzookers! I have hit o't. As sure as a gun, I have hit o' the very right o't. It's all along o'zister. The girl hath got a hankering after this son of a whore of a lord. I vound 'em together at my cousin, my Lady Bellaston's. He hath turned the head o' her, that's certain—but d—n me, if he shall ha' her. I'll ha' no lords nor courtiers in my vamily.'

Allworthy now made a long speech, in which he repeated his resolution to evoid all violent measures; and very earnestly recommended gentle methods to Mr. Western, as those by which he might be assured of succeeding best with his daughter. He then took his leave, and returned back to Mrs. Miller, but was forced to comply with the earnest entreaties of the squire, in promising to bring Mr. Jones to visit him that afternoon, that he might, as he said, make all matters up with the young gentleman. At Mr. Allworthy's departure, Western promised to follow his advice, in his behaviour to Sophia; saying—'I don't know how 'tis; but d—n me, Allworthy, if you don't make me always do just as you please; and yet I have as good an estate as you, and am in the commission of the peace as well as yourself.'

CHAP. X.

Wherein the History begins to draw towards a Conclusion.

WHEN Allworthy returned to his lodgings, he heard Mr. Jones was just arrived before him. He hurried, therefore, instantly into an empty chamber, whither he ordered Mr. Jones to be brought to him alone.

It is impossible to conceive a more tender, moving fcene, than the meeting between the uncle and nephew; (for Mrs. Waters, as the reader may well suppose, had, at their last visit, discovered to him the secret of his birth.) The first agonies of joy which were felt on both fides, are indeed beyond my power to describe: I shall not, therefore, attempt it. After Allworthy had raised Jones from his feet, where he had proftrated himself, and received him into his arms, 'O my child, he cried, how have I been to blame! how have I injured you! What amends can I ever make you, for those unkind, those unjust suspicions, which I have entertained; and for all the fufferings they have occasioned to you?'-· Am I not now made amends? cried Jones: would not my fufferings, if they had been ten times greater, have been now richly repaid? O, my dear uncle! this goodness, this tenderness, overpowers, unmans, destroys

me! I cannot bear the transports which flow so fast upon me. To be again restored to your presence, to your favour; to be once more thus kindly received, by my great, my noble, my generous benefactor-'- Indeed. child, cries Allworthy, I have used you cruelly.' He then explained to him all the treachery of Blifil; and again repeated expressions of the utmost concern, for having been induced by that treachery to use him so ill. O, talk not lo, answered Jones: indeed, Sir, you have used me nobly. The wifest man might be deceived as you were; and, under fuch a deception, the best must have acted just as you did. Your goodness displayed itfelf in the midft of your anger, just as it then feemed. I owe every thing to that goodness of which I have been most unworthy. Do not put me on self-accusation, by carrying your generous sentiments too far. Alas! Sir, I have not been punished more than I have deserved; and it shall be the whole business of my future life, to deserve that happiness you now bestow on me; for, believe me, my dear uncle, my punishment hath not been thrown away upon me: though I have been a great, I am not a hardened finner; I thank Heaven, I have had time to reflect on my past life; where, though I cannot charge myself with any gross villany, yet I can discern follies and vices more than enough to repent and to be ashamed of; follies which have been attended with dreadful confequences to myself, and have brought me to the brink of destruction.'- I am rejoiced, my dear child, answered Allworthy, to hear you talk thus sensbly; for as I am convinced hypocrify (good Heaven, how have I been imposed on by it in others!) was never among your faults, fo I can readily believe all you fay. You now see, Tom, to what dangers imprudence alone may subject virtue; (for virtue, I am convinced, you love in a great degree.) Prudence is, indeed, the duty which we owe to ourselves; and if we will be so much our own enemies as to neglect it, we are not to wonder if the world is deficient in discharging their duty to us; for, when a man lays the foundation of his own ruin,

others will, I am afraid, be too apt to build upon it. You fay, however, you have feen your errors, and will reform them. I firmly believe you, my dear child; and therefore, from this moment, you thall never more bereminded of them by me. Remember them only yourfelf, so far, as for the future to teach you the better to avoid them; but still remember, for your comfort, that there is this great difference between those faults which candour may conftrue into imprudence, and those which can be deduced from villany only. The former, perhaps, are even more apt to subject a man to ruin; but if he reforms, his character will, at length, be totally retrieved; the world, though not immediately, will, in time, be reconciled to him; and he may reflect, not without some mixture of pleasure, on the dangers he hath escaped: but villany, my boy, when once discovered, is irretrievable; the stains which this leaves behind no time will wash away. The censures of mankind will pursue the wretch; their scorn will abash him in public; and if shame drives him into retirement, he will go to it with all those terrors with which a weary child, who is afraid of hobgoblins, retreats from company to go to bed alone. Here his murdered conscience will haunt him; repose, like a false friend, will fly from him; wherever he turns his eyes, horror presents itself. If he looks backward, unavailable repentance treads on his heel; if forward, incurable despair stares him in the face; till, like a condemned prisoner, confined in a dungeon, he detelts his present condition, and yet dreads the consequence of that hour which is to relieve him from it. Comfort yourself, I say, my child, that this is not your case; and rejoice with thankfulness to Him who hath fuffered you to fee your errors, before they have brought on you that destruction, to which a persistence in even those errors must have led you. You have deferted them; and the prospect now before you is such that happiness seems in your own power.'- At these words, Jones fetched a deep figh; upon which, when Allworthy remonstrated, he faid, 'Sir, I will conceal

nothing from you: I fear there is one consequence of my vices I shall never be able to retrieve. O, my dear uncle, I have lost a treasure!'- You need fay no more, answered Allworthy; I will be explicit with you; I know what you lament; I have feen the young lady, and have discoursed with her concerning you. This I must insist on, as an earnest of your sincerity in all you have said, and of the stedsastness of your resolution, that you obey me in one instance-to abide entirely by the determination of the young lady, whether it shall be in your favour or no. She hath already suffered enough from folicitations which I hate to think of; the shall owe no farther constraint to my family: I know her father will be as ready to torment her now on your account, as he hath formerly been on another's; but I am determined the shall suffer no more confinement, no more violence, no more uneasy hours.'- 'O, my dear uncle! answered Jones, lay, I beseech you, some command on me, in which I shall have some merit in obedience. Believe me, Sir, the only instance in which I could disobey you, would be to give an uneasy moment to my Sophia. No, Sir, if I am so miserable to have incurred her displeasure beyond all hope of forgiveness, that alone, with the dreadful reflection of causing her misery, will be sufficient to overpower me. To call Sophia mine is the greatest, and now the only additional bleffing which Heaven can bestow; but it is a blessing which I must owe to her alone.'- 'I will not flatter you child, cries Allworthy; I fear your case is desperate: I never faw stronger marks of an unalterable resolution in any person, than appeared in her vehement declarations against receiving your addresses; for which, perhaps, you can account better than myfelf.'- 'O, Sir, I can account too well! answered Jones; I have sinned against her beyond all hope of pardon; and, guilty as I am, my guilt unfortunately appears to her in ten times blacker than the real colours. O, my dear uncle! I find my follies are irretrievable; and all your goodness cannot fave me from perdition!'

A servant now acquainted them that Mr. Western was below stairs; for his eagerness to see Jones could not wait till the afternoon. Upon which Jones, whose eyes were full of tears, begged his uncle to entertain Western a sew minutes, till he a little recovered himself: to which the good man consented; and having ordered Mr. Western to be shewn into a parlour, went down to him.

Mrs. Miller no sooner heard that Jones was alone (for the had not yet seen him since his release from prison) than she came eagerly into the room; and advancing towards Jones, wished him heartily joy of his new-found uncle, and his happy reconciliation; adding, 'I wish I could give you joy on another account, my dear child;

but any thing so inexorable I never saw!'

Jones, with some appearance of surprise, asked her what the meant .- 'Why, then, fays the, I have been with your young lady, and have explained all matters to her, as they were told me by my fon Nightingale. She can have no longer any doubt about the letter, that I am certain; for I told her, my fon Nightingale was ready to take his oath, if the pleased, that it was all his own invention, and the letter of his inditing. I told her, the very reason of sending the letter ought to recommend you to her the more; as it was all upon her account, and a plain proof that you was refolved to quit your profligacy for the future; that you had never been guilty of a fingle instance of infidelity to her fince your leeing her in town. I am afraid I went too far there; but Heaven forgive me! I hope your future behaviour will be my justification. I am sure, I have said all I can; but all to no purpose. She remains inflexible. She faid, the had forgiven many faults on account of youth; but expressed such detestation of the character of a libertine, that the absolutely filenced me. I often attempted to excuse you; but the justness of her accusation flew in iny face. Upon my honour, she is a lovely woman, and one of the sweetest and most sensible creatures I ever faw! I could have almost killed her, for one expression

the made use of .- It was a sentiment worthy of Seneca, or of a bishop .- " I once fancied, Madam, said she, I had discovered great goodness of heart in Mr. Jones; and for that, I own, I had a fincere effeem; but an entire profligacy of manners will corrupt the best heart in the world; and all which a good-natured libertine can expect, is, that we should mix some grains of pity with our contempt and abhorrence." She is an angelic creature, that is the truth on't !'- 'O, Mrs. Miller, answered Jones, can I bear to think I have loft fuch an angel!" - Lost! no, cries Mrs. Miller; I hope you have not lost her yet. Resolve to leave such vicious courses, and you may yet have hopes: nay, if the should remain inexorable, there is another young lady, a fweet pretty young lady, and a fwingeing fortune, who is absolutely dying for love of you. I heard of it this very morning, and I told it to Miss Western: nay, I went a little beyond the truth again; for I told her, you had refused her; but, indeed, I know you would refuse her. And here I must give you a little comfort : when I mentioned the young lady's name, who is no other than the pretty widow Hunt, I thought she turned pale; but when I faid you had refused her, I will be sworn, her face was all over scarlet in an instant; and these were her very words-" I will not deny but that I believe he has fome affection for me."

Here the conversation was interrupted by the arrival of Western, who could no longer be kept out of the room, even by the authority of Allworthy himself; though this, as we have often seen, had a wonderful pow-

er over him.

Western immediately went up to Jones, crying out, My old friend Tom, I am glad to see thee with all my heart. All past must be forgotten. I could not intend any affront to thee, because, as Allworthy here knows, nay, dost know it thyself, I took thee for another person; and where a body means no harm, what signifies a hasty word or two? one Christian must forget and forgive another. I hope, Sir, said Jones, I shall never forget

Vel. III Bb

The conversation which now ensued was pleasant enough; and with which, had it happened earlier in our history, we would have entertained our reader; but as we have now leifure only to attend to what is very material, it shall suffice to say, that matters being entirely adjusted as to the afternoon visit, Mr. Western again re-

turned home.

CHAP. XI.

The History draws nearer to a Conclusion.

7HEN Mr. Western was departed, Jones began to inform Mr. Allworthy and Mrs. Miller, that his liberty had been procured by two noble lords who, together with two furgeons, and a friend of Mr. Nightingale's had attended the magistrate by whom he had been committed, and by whom, on the furgeon's oath. that the wounded person was out of all manner of danger from his wound, he was discharged us on an daut

One only of these lords, he said, he had seen before, but no more than once; but the other had greatly furprised him, by asking his pardon for an offence he had been guilty of towards him, occasioned, he said, entire-

ly by his ignorance who he was. w nother and the

Now the reality of the case, with which Jones was not acquainted till afterwards, was this: the lieutenant whom Lord Fellamar had employed according to the advice of Lady Bellatton to preis Jones, as a vagabond, into the fea-fervice, when he came to report to his lordship the event which we have before seen, spoke very favourably of the behavour of Mr. Jones on all accounts; and strongly assured that lord, that he must have mistaken the person; for that Jones was certainly a gentleman: insomuch that his lordship, who was strictly a man of honour, and would by no means have been guilty of an action which the world in general would have condemned, began to be much concerned for the advice which he had taken.

Within a day or two after this, Lord Fellamar happened to dine with the Irish peer, who, in a converfation upon the duel, acquainted his company with the character of Fitzpatrick; to which, indeed, he did not do strict justice, especially in what related to his lady. He said, she was the most innocent, and most injured woman alive, and that from compassion alone he had undertaking her cause. He then declared an intention of going the next morning to Fitzpatrick's lodgings, in order to prevail with him, if possible, to consent to a separation from his wife; who, the peer said, was in apprehensions for her lite, if she should ever return to be under the power of her husband. Lord Fellamar agreed to go with him, that he might fatisfy himself more concerning Jones, and the circumstances of the duel; for he was by no means easy concerning the part he had acted. The moment his lordship gave a hint of his readiness to affift in the delivery of the lady, it was eagerly embraced by the other nobleman, who depended much on the authority of Lord Feilamar; as he thought it would greatly contribute to awe Fitzpatrick into a compliance; and, perhaps, he was in the right; for the poor Irishman no sooner saw these noble peers had undertaken the cause of his wife, than he submitted; and articles of separation were soon drawn up and signed between the parties.

Fizpetrick had been so well satisfied by Mrs. Waters concerning the innocence of his wife with Jones at Upton, or, perhaps, from some other reasons, was now become so indifferent to that matter, that he spoke highly in fa-

vour of Jones to Lord Fellamar, took all the blame upon himself, and said, the other had behaved very much like a gentleman, and a man of honour; and upon that lord's farther inquiry concerning Mr. Jones, Fitzpatrick told him he was nephew to a gentleman of very great sashion and sertune, which was the account he had just received from Mrs. Waters, after her interview with

Dowling.

Lord Fellamar now thought it behoved him to do every thing in his power to make satisfaction to a gentleman whom he had so grossly injured; and, without any consideration of rivalship, (for he had now given over all thoughts of Sophia,) determined to procure Mr. Jones's liberty; being satisfied, as well from Fitzpatrick as his surgeon, that the wound was not mortal. He therefore prevailed with the Irish peer to accompany him to the place where Jones was confined, to whom he behaved as we have already related.

When Allworthy returned to his lodgings, he immediately carried Jones into his room, and then acquainted him with the whole matter, as well what he had heard from Mrs. Waters, as what he had discovered from Mr.

bappy beyond ranged

Dowling.

Jones expressed great astonishment, and no less concern, at this account, but without making any comment or observation upon it. And now a message was brought from Mr. Blifil, defiring to know if his uncle was at leisure, that he might wait upon him. Allworthy started, and turned pale; and then, in a more passionate tone than I believe he had ever used before, bid the servant tell Bliff, he knew him not. 'Confider dear Sir,' cries Jones, in a trembling voice. - I have confidered, answered Allworthy; and you yourfelf shall carry my message to the villain. No one can carry him the sentence of his ruin fo properly as the man whose ruin he hath so villanously contrived.'- ' Pardon me, dear Sir, faid Jones; a moment's reflection will, I am fure, convince you of the contrary. What might perhaps be but justice from another tongue, would from mine be infult!

And to whom?—my own brother, and your nephew. Nor did he use me so barbarously. Indeed, that would have been more inexcuseable than any thing he hath done. Fortune may tempt men of no very bad dispositions to injustice; but insults proceed only from black and rancorous minds, and have no temptations to excuse them. Let me beseech you, Sir, to do nothing by him in the present height of your anger. Consider, my dear uncle, I was not myself condemned unheard. — Allworthy stood silent a moment, and then embracing Jones, he said, with tears gushing from his eyes— O, my child! to what

goodnets have I been fo long blind!'

Mrs. Miller entering the room at that moment, after a gentle rap, which was not perceived, and feeing Jones in the arms of his uncle, the poor woman, in an agony of joy, fell upon her knees, and burft forth into the most ecstatic thanksgiving to heaven for what had happened. Then running to Jones, the embraced him eagerly, crying, My dearest friend, I wish you joy a thousand and a thousand times of this blessed day!' and next Mr. Allworthy himself received the same congratulations. which he answered, 'Indeed, indeed, Mrs. Miller, I am happy beyond expression. Some few more raptures having passed on all sides, Mrs. Miller desired them both to walk down to dinner in the parlour, where she said there were a very happy fet of people affembled; being, indeed, no other than Mr. Nightingale and his bride, and his cousin Harris with her bridegroom.

Allworthy excused himself form dinner with the company, saying, he had ordered some little thing for him and his nephew in his own apartment; for that they had much private business to discourse of, but could not resist promising the good woman, that both he and Jones would

make part of her fociety at fupper.

Mrs. Miller then asked what was to be done with Bliss! 'For, indeed, says she, I cannot be easy while such a villain is in my House.' Allworthy answered, he was as uneasy as herself on the same account. 'O! ories she, if that be the case, leave the matter to me;

I'll foon flew him the outfide of my doors, I warrant you. Here are two or three lufty fellows below stairs. - There will be no need of any violence, cries Allworthy; if you will carry him a melfage from me, he will. I am convinced, depart of his own accord.'- Will 1. faid Mrs. Miller; I never did any thing in my life with a better will.' Here Jones interfered, and said, he had considered the matter better, and would, if Mr. Allworthy pleased, be himself the messenger. I know, fays he, already enough of your pleasure, Sir, and I beg leave to acquaint him with it by my own words. Let me beseech you, Sir, added he, to reflect on the dreadful consequences of driving him to violent and sudden despair. How unfit, alas! is this poor man to die in his present situation!' This suggestion had not the least effect on Mrs. Miller. She lett the room, crying, 'You are too good, Mr. Jones, infinitely too good to live in this world.' But it made a deeper impression on Allworthy. 'My good child, faid he, I am equally aftonished at the goodness of your heart, and the quickness of your understanding. Heaven, indeed, forbid, that this wretch should be deprived of any means or time for repentance: that would be a shocking consideration indeed! Go to him, therefore, and use your own discretion; yet do not flatter him with any hopes of my forgivenels: for I shall never forgive villany farther than my religion obliges me, and that extends not either to our bounty or our conversation.'

Jones went up to Blifil's room, whom he found in a fituation which moved his pity, though it would have raifed a less amiable passion in many beholders. He cast himself on his bed, where he lay abandoning himself to despair, and drowned in tears; not in such tears as flow from contrition, and wash away guilt from minds which have been seduced or surprised into it unawares, against the bent of their natural dispositions, as will sometimes happen from human frailty, even to the good; no, these tears were such as the frighted thief sheds in the cart, and are, indeed, the effects of that concern which

the most savage natures are seldom deficient in feeling for themselves.

It would be unpleasant and tedious to paint this scene at full length. Let it suffice to say, that the behaviour of Jones was kind to excess. He omitted nothing which his invention could supply, to raise and comfort the drooping spirits of Bliss, before he communicated to him the resolution of his uncle, that he must quit the house that evening. He offered to surnish him with any money he wanted; assured him of his hearty forgiveness of all he had done against him; that he would endeavour to live with him hereaster as a brother and would leave nothing unattempted to effectuate a reconciliation with his uncle.

Blifil was at first sullen and silent, balancing in his mind whether he should yet deny all: but finding at last the evidence too strong against him, he betook himself at last to confession. He then asked pardon of his brother in the most vehement manner, prostrated himself on the ground, and kissed his seet; in short, he was now as remarkably mean, as he had been before remarkably wicked.

Jones could not fo far check his disdain, but that it a little discovered itselt in his countenance at this extreme fervility. He raised his brother the moment he could from the ground, and advised him, to bear his afflictions more like a man; repeating at the same time, his promises, that he would do all in his power to lessen them; for which Bliss making many professions of his unworthiness, poured forth a profusion of thanks; and then having declared he would immediately depart to another lodging, Jones returned to his uncle.

Among other matters, Allworthy now acquainted Jones with the discovery which he had made concerning the 500l. bank-notes. 'I have, said he, already confulted a lawyer, who tells me, to my great astonishment, that there is no punishment for a fraud of this kind. Indeed, when I consider the black ingratitude of this

fellow towards you, I think a highwayman, compared to

him, is an innocent person.'

'Good Heaven! fays Jones, is it possible? I am shocked beyond measure at this news. I thought there was not an honester fellow in the world. The temptation of fuch a fum was too great for him to withstand; for smaller matters have come safe to me through his hands. Indeed, my dear uncle, you must suffer me to call it weakness rather than ingratitude; for I am convinced the poor fellow loves me, and hath done me some kindness which I can never forget; nay, I believe he hath repented of this very act; for it is not above a day or two ago, when my affairs seemed in a most desperate situation, that he visited me in my confinement, and offered me any money I wanted. Consider, Sir, what a temptation to a man who hath tasted such bitter distress, it must be, to have a fum in his possession, which must put him and his family beyond any future possibility of suffering the like."

' Child, cries Allworthy, you carry this forgiving temper too far. Such mistaken mercy is not only weakness, but borders on injustice, and is very pernicious to society, as it encourages vice. The dishonesty of this fellow I might perhaps have pardoned, but never his ingratitude. And give me leave to fay, when we fuffer any temptation, to atone for dishonesty itself, we are as candid and merciful as we ought to be; and fo far I confess I have gone; for I have often pitied the fate of a highwayman, when I have been on the grand jury; and have more than once applied to the judge on the behalf of fuch as have had any mitigating circumstances in their case; but when dishonesty is attended with any blacker crime, fuch as cruelty, murder, ingratitude, or the like, compaffion and forgiveness then become faults. I am convinced the fellow is a villain, and he shall be punished; at least as far as I can punish him.'

not think proper to make any reply: besides, the hour appointed by Mr. Western now drew so near, that he

had barely time left to dress himself. Here therefore ended the present dialogue, and Jones retired to another room, where Partridge attended, according to order, with his cloatlis.

Partridge had scarce seen his master since the happy discovery. The poor sellow was unable either to contain or express his transports. He behaved like one frantic, and made almost as many mistakes while he was dressing Jones, as I have seen made by Harlequin, in

dreffing himfelf on the stage.

His memory, however, was not in the least deficient. He recollected now many omens and presages of this happy event, some of which he had remarked at the time, but many more he now remembered: nor did he omit the dreams he had dreamt the evening before his meeting with Jones; and concluded with saying, "I always told your honour something beded in my mind, that you would one time or other have it in your power to make my fortune." Jones affured him that this boding should as certainly be verified with regard to him, as all the other omens had been to himself, which did not a little add to all the raptures which the poor fellow had already conceived on account of his master.

CHAP. XII.

JONES being now completely dressed, attended his uncle to Mr. Western's. He was, indeed, one of the finest figures ever beheld, and his person alone would have charmed the greater part of womankind; but we hope it has already appeared in this history, that Nature, when she formed him, did not totally rely, as she sometimes doth, on this merit only to recommend her work.

Sophia, who, angry as she was, was likewise set forth to the best advantage, for which I leave my semale readers to account, appeared so extremely beautiful, that even Allworthy, when he saw her, could not forbear whispering Western, that he believed she was the finest

creature in the world. To which Western answered, in a whisper, overheard by all present—'So much the better for Tom; for, d—n me, if he shan't ha' the touzling her!' Sophia was all over scarlet at these words; while Tom's countenance was altogether pale, and he was almost ready to sink from his chair.

The tea-table was scarce removed, before Western lugged Allworthy out of the room, telling him, he had business of consequence to impart, and must speak to him

that instant in private, before he forgot it.

The lovers were now alone; and it will, I question not, appear strange to many readers, that those who had so much to say to one another, when danger and difficulty attended their conversation, and who seemed so eager to rush into each other's arms, when so many bars lay in their way, now that with safety they were at liberty to say or do whatever they pleased, should both remain for some time filent and motionless; insomuch, that a stranger of moderate sagacity might have well concluded they were mutually indifferent: but so it was, however strange it may seem: both sat with their eyes cast downwards on the ground, and for some minutes

continued in perfect silence.

Mr. Jones, during this interval, attempted once or twice to speak, but was absolutely incapable, muttering only, or rather fighing out, some broken words; when Sophia, at length, partly out of pity to him, and partly to turn the discourse from the subject which she knew well enough he was endeavouring to open, faid, Sure, Sir, you are the most fortunate man in the world, in this discovery.'- 'And can you really, Madam, think me so fortunate, said Jones, sighing, while I have incurred your displeasure?'- 'Nay, Sir, says she, as to that, you best know whether you have deserved it.'- Indeed, Madam, answered he, you yourself are as well apprised of all my demerits. Mrs. Miller has acquainted you with the whole truth. O, my Sophia! am I never to hope for forgiveness!'- I think, Mr. Jones, said she, I may almost depend on your own justice, and leave it

to yourself to pass sentence on your own conduct.'-Alas, Madam ! answered he, it is mercy, and not justice, which I implore at your hands. Juffice, I know. must condemn me-yet, not for the letter I sent to Lady Bellaston; of that, I most solemnly declare, you have had a true account. He then infifted much on the fecurity given him by Nightingale, of a fair pretence for breaking off, if, contrary to their expectations, her ladyship should have accepted his offer; but confessed, that he had been guilty of a great indifcretion, to put fuch a letter as that into her power; which, faid he, I have dearly paid for, in the effect it has had upon you! - I do not, I cannot, fays the, believe otherwise of that letter than you would have me. My conduct, I think, shews you clearly I do not believe there is much in that: and yet, Mr. Jones, have I not enough to resent? After what passed at Upton, so soon to engage in a new amour with another woman, while I fancied, and you pretended, your heart was bleeding for me ! Indeed, you have acted strangely. Can I believe the passion you have professed to me to be sincere? or if I can, what happiness can I assure myself of, with a man capable of so much inconstancy?'- O, my Sophia, cries he, do not doubt the fincerity of the pureft passion that ever inflamed a human breast. Think, most adorable creature, of my unhappy situation, of my despair! Could I, my Sophia, have flattered myfelf with the most distant hopes of being ever permitted to throw myfelf at your feet, in the manner I do now, it would not have been in the power of any other woman to have inspired a thought which the severest chastity could have condemned. Inconstancy to you! O' Bophia, if you can have goodness enough to pardon what is past, do not let any future cruel apprehension thut your mercy against me! No repentance was ever more fincere. O, let it reconcile me to my heaven, in this dear bosom. - Sincere repentance, Mr. Jones, answered flie, will obtain the partion of a finner; but it is from one who is a perfect judge of that fincerity. A human

mind may be imposed on; nor is there any infallible method to prevent it. You must expect, however, that if I can be prevailed on, by your repentance, to pardon you, I will, at least, infift on the strongest proof of its fincerity.'- 'O! name any proof in my power,' answered Jones, eagerly .- 'Time, replied she, time alone, Mr. lones, can convince me that you are a true penitent, and have rejolved to abandon these vicious courses, which I should detest your for, if I imagined you capable of persevering in them.'- Do not imagine it, cries Jones. On my knees 1 intreat, I implore your confidence; a confidence, which it shall be the business of my life to deserve.'- 'Let it then, said she, be the business of some part of your life to shew me you deserve it. think I have been explicit enough in affuring you, that when I fee you merit my confidence, you will obtain it. After what is past, Sir, can you expect I should take you upon your word?'

He replied, 'Don't believe me upon my word; I have a better security, a pledge for my constancy, which it is impossible to see, and to doubt.'- 'What is that !' faid Sophia, a little furprised .- 'I will shew you, my charming angel, cried Jones, seizing her hand, and carrying her to the glass. There, behold it there, in that lovely figure, in that face, that shape, those eyes, that mind which shines through those eyes t can the man who shall be in possession of these be inconstant? Impossible! my Sophia: they would fix a Dorimant, a Lord Rochefter. You could not doubt it, if you could fee yourfelf with any eyes but your own.' Sophia blushed, and half smiled; but forcing again her brow into a frown-' If I am to judge, faid she, of the future by the past, my image will no more remain in your heart when I am out of your fight, than it will in this glass when I am out of the room.'- By heaven! by all that is facred! Lid Jones, it was never out of my heart! The delicacy of your fex cannot conceive the groffness of ours, nor how little one fort of amour has to do with the heart.'

White the State of the Land Committee of the State of the



H. Singleton del

Printed for Capoler than Sec 22 1792

C Wheren smile?

I will never marry a man, replied Sophia, very gravely, who shall not learn refinement enough to be as incapable as I am mylelf, of making such a distinction,'-I will learn it, faid Jones; I have learnt it already. The first moment of hope, that my Sophia might be my wife, taught it me at once; and all the rest of her fex. from that moment, became as little the objects of defire to my fenie, as of passion to my heart."- Well, faid Sophia, the proof of this must be from time. Your fituation, Mr. Jones, is now altered; and I affure you, I have great fatisfaction in the alteration. You will now want no opportunity of being near me, and convincing me that your mind is altered too.'- 'O! my angel, cries Jones, how shall I thank thy goodness ? And are you to good to own, that you have a fatisfaction in my prosperity? Believe me, believe me, Madam, it is you alone have given me a relish for that profperity, fince I owe it to the dear hope-O my Sophia! let it not be a distant one! I will be all obedience to your commands. I will not dare to press any thing farther than you permit me. Yet, let me entreat you to appoint a fhort trial. O! tell me, when I may expect you will be convinced of what is most solemnly true.'- When I have gone voluntarily thus far, Mr. Jones, faid she, I expect not to be pressed. Nay, I will not.'- O, do not look fo unkindly, thus, my Sophia! cries he; I do not, I dare not press you: yet, permit me, at least, once more, to beg you would fix the period. O! confider the impatience of love!'- A twelvemonth, perhaps,' faid she .- 'O, my Sophia! cries he, you have named an eternity !'- Perhaps it may be fome. thing fooner, fays she: I will not be teazed. If your passion for me be what I would have it, I think you may now be easy.'- Easy, Sophia! call not such exulting happiness as mine, by so cold a name! O transporting thought! am I not affured that the bleffed day will come, when I shall call you mine; when fears shall be no more; when I shall have that dear, that wast, that exquifite, extratic delight, of making my Sophia happy !" VOL. III.

— Indeed, Sir, said she, that day is in your power.'—
O! my dear, my divine angel, cried he, these words.
have made me mad with joy. But I must, I will thank
those dear lips, which have so sweetly pronounced my
bliss.' He then caught her in his arms, and kissed her

with an ardour he had never ventured before.

At this inftant, Western, who had stood some time liftening, burst into the room, and, with his hunting voice and phrase, cried out- To her, boy! to her! go to her! That's it, little honies. O! that's it!-Well, what, is it all over? Hath she appointed the day, boy? What, shall it be to-morrow, or next day? It shan't be put off a minute longer than next day. I am resolved.'- Let me beseech you, Sir, said Jones, don't let me be the occasion—'- Beseech mine a-cries Western; I thought thou hadft been a lad of higher mettle than to give way to a parcel of maidenish tricks. I tell thee, it is all a flim flam. Zoodikers! she'd have the wedding to-night, with all her heart. Would'st not, Sophy? Come, confess, and be an honest girl for once. What art dumb ? Why dost not speak?'- Why should I confess, Sir? says Sophia, fince it seems you are fo well acquainted with my thoughts.'- 'That's a good girl, cries he; and dost consent then?'- No, indeed, Sir, fays Sophia; I have given no fuch confent. - 'And wunt nut ha'un, then to-morrow, nor next day? fays Western.- 'Indeed, Sir, says she, I have no such intention.'- But I can tell thee, replied he, why hast not; only because thou dost love to be disobedient, and to plague and vex thy father.'- 'Pray Sir-' faid Jones, interfering. - I tell thee thou art a puppy, cries he; when I forbid her, then it was nothing but fighing and whining, and languishing and writing: now I am vor thee, the is against thee !- All the spirit of contrary, that's all. She is above being guided and governed by her father, that is the whole truth on't. It is only to disablige and contradict me.'- What would my papa have me do?' cries Sophia .- ' What would I ha' thee do? fays he, why, gee un thy hand this moment.'-

Well, Sir, faid Sophia, I will obey you. There is my hand, Mr. Jones.'—' Well; and will you consent to ha' un to-morrow morning? fays Western.'—' I will be obedient to you, Sir,' cries she.—' Why then, to-morrow morning be the day,' cries he.—' Why then, to-morrow morning shall be the day, papa, since you will have it so,' says Sophia. Jones then fell upon his knees, and kissed her hand in an agony of joy, while Western began to caper and dance about the room, presently crying out, 'Where the devil is Allworthy? He is without now, a talking with that d—d Lawyer Dowling, when he should be minding other matters.' He then sallied out in quest of him, and very opportunely left the lovers to enjoy a few tender minutes alone.

But he soon returned with Allworthy, saying, 'If you won't believe me, you may alk her yourself. Hast not gin thy consent, Sophy, to be married to morrow?-Such are your commands, Sir, cries Sophia; and I dare not be guilty of disobedience.'- 'I hope, Madam, cries Allworthy, my nephew will merit fo much goodness; and will be always as sensible as myself, of the great honour you have done my family: an alliance with to charming and fo excellent a young lady, would indeed be an honour to the greatest in England.'- Yes, cries Western; but if I had suffered her to stand shilly shally, dilly dally, you might not have had that honour yet awhile: I was forced to use a little fatherly authority to bring her to.'- I hope not, Sir, cries Allworthy; I hope there is not the least constraint.'- Why, there! cries Western, you may bid her unsay all again, if you will. Dost repent heartily of thy promise, dost not, Sophy?'-- Indeed, papa, cries she, I do not repent; nor do I believe I ever shall, of any promise in tavour of Mr. Jones.'- 'Then, nephew, cries Allworthy, I felicitate you most heartily; for I think you are the happiest of men. And, Madam, you will give me leave to congratulate you on this joyful occasion: indeed, I am convinced you have bestowed yourself on one who will

be fensible of your great merit, and who will at least ase his best endeavours to deserve it.'- 'His best endeavours ! cries Western; that he will, I warrant un. Hark'e, Allworthy, I'll bet thee five pounds to a crown, we have a boy to morrow nine months: but, pr'ythee, tell me what wut ha? wut ha' burgundy, champaigne, or what? for, please Jupiter, we'll make a night on't.'-Indeed, Sir, faid Allworthy, you must excuse me; both my nephew and I were engaged, before I suspected this near approach of his happiness.'- 'Engaged! quoth the squire; never tell me. I won't part with thee to night upon any occasion. Shalt sup here, please the Lord Harry.'- You must pardon me my dear neighbour, answered Allworthy; I have given a solemn promise, and that you know I never break.'- 'Why, pr'ythee, who art engaged to?' cries the fquire. Allworthy then informed him, as likewife of the company. 'Odzookers! answered the squire, I will go with thee, and so shall Sophy; for I won't part with thee to-night; and it would be barbarous to part Tom and the girl. offer was presently embraced by Allworthy: and Sophia confented; having first obtained a private promise from her father, that he would not mention a syllable concerning her marriage.

CHAP. THE LAST.

In which the History is concluded.

YOUNG Nightingale had been that afternoon, by appointment, to wait on his father, who received him much more kindly than he expected there likewise he met his uncle, who was returned to town in quest of

his new-married daughter.

This marriage was the luckiest incident which could have happened to the young gentleman; for these brothers lived in a constant state of contention about the government of their children, both heartily despising the method which each other took. Each of them therefore now endeavoured as much as he could to palliate the offence which his own child had committed, and to aggravate the match of the other. This desire of triumphing

over his brother, added to the many arguments which Allworthy had used, so strongly operated on the old gentleman, that he met his son with a smiling countenance, and actually agreed to sup with him that evening at Mrs. Miller's.

As for the other, who really loved his daughter with the most immoderate affection, there was little difficulty in inclining him to a reconciliation. He was no sooner informed by his nephew where his daughter and her husband were, than he declared he would instantly go to her; and when he arrived there, he scarce suffered her to fall upon her knees, before he took her up, and embraced her with a tenderness which affected all who saw him; and in less than a quarter of an hour was as well reconciled to both her and her husband, as if he had himself joined their hands.

In this situation were affairs, when Mr. Allworthy and his company arrived to complete the happiness of Mrs. Miller, who no sooner saw Sophia, than she guessed every thing that had happened; and so great was her friendship to Jones, that it added not a few transports to those she felt on the happiness of her own daughter.

There have not, I believe, been many instances of a number of people met together, where every one was fo perfectly happy, as in this company. Amonst whom, the father of young Nightingale enjoyed the least perfect content; for, notwithstanding his affection for his fon; notwithstanding the authority and the arguments of Allworthy, together with the other motive mentioned before, he could not be so entirely satisfied with his fon's choice: and perhaps the presence of Sophia herself tended a little to aggravate and heighten his concern, as a thought now and then suggested itself, that his fon might have had that lady, or some such other: not that any of the charms which adorned either the person or mind of Sophia, created the uneasiness; it was the contents of her father's coffers which fet his heart a longing. These were the charms which he could

Cc3

not bear to think his fon had facrificed to the daughter of Mrs. Miller.

The brides were both very pretty women; but so totally were they eclipsed by the beauty of Sophia, that had they not been two of the best tempered girls in the world, it would have raised some envy in their breasts; for neither of their husbands could long keep his eyes from Sophia; who sat at the table like a queen receiving homage, or rather like a superior being receiving adoration from all around her; but it was an adoration which they gave, not which she exacted; for she was as much distinguished by her modesty and affability, as by

all her other perfections.

The evening was spent in much true mirth. All were happy; but those the most, who had been most unhappy before. Their former sufferings and fears gave fuch a relish to their felicity, as even love and fortune, in their fullest flow, could not have given without the advantage of such a comparison. Yet, as great joy, especially after a sudden change and revolution of circumstances, is apt to be filent, and dwells rather in the heart than on the tongue, Jones and Sophia appeared the least merry of the whole company: which Western obferved with great impatience, often crying out to them, Why do'ft not talk, boy! why do'ft look fo grave!-Haft loft thy tongue, girl! Drink another glass of wine; sha't drink another glass.' And the more to enliven her, he would fometimes fing a merry fong, which bore some relation to matrimony, and the loss of a maidenhead: nay, he would have proceeded fo far on that topic, as to have driven her out of the room, if Mr. Allworthy had not checked him, sometimes by looks, and once or twice by a- Fie! Mr. Western!' He began, indeed, once to debate the matter, and affert his right to talk to his own daughter as he thought fit; but as nobody feconded him, he was foon reduced to order.

Notwithstanding this little restraint, he was so pleased with the cheerfulness and good-hummor of the com-

pany, that he infifted on their meeting the next day at his lodgings. They all did so: and the lovely Sophia, who was now in private become a bride too, officiated as the mistress of the ceremonies; or, in the polite phrase, did the honours of the table. She had that morning given her hand to Jones in the chapel in Doctor's Commons; where Mr. Allworthy, Mr. Western, and Mrs.

Miller, were the only persons present.

Sophia had earnestly defired her father, that no others of the company, who were that day to dine with them, should be acquainted with her marriage. The same secrefy was enjoined to Mrs. Miller, and Jones undertook for Mr. Allworthy. This somewhat reconciled the delicacy of Sophia to the public entertainment, which, in compliance with her father's will, she was obliged to go to, greatly against her own inclinations. In confidence of this fecrefy, she went through the day pretty well; till the fquire, who was now advanced into the fecond bottle, could contain his joy no longer; but, filling out a bumper, drank a health to the bride. The health was immediately pledged by all present, to the great confusion of the poor blushing Sophia, and the great concern of Jones upon her account. To fay truth, there was not a perfon present made wifer by this discovery; for Mrs. Miller had whispered it to her daughter, her daughter to her husband, her husband to his fifter, and she to all the reft.

Sophia now took the first opportunity of withdrawing with the ladies, and the squire sat in to his cups; in which he was, by degrees, deserted by all the company, except the uncle of young Nightingale, who loved his bottle as well as Western himself. These two therefore sat stoutly to it during the whole evening, and long after that happy hour which had surrendered the charming Sophia to the eager arms of her enraptured Jones.

Thus reader, we have at length brought our history to a conclusion; in which, to our great pleasure, though contrary, perhaps, to thy expectation, Mr. Jones appears to be the happiest of all human kind; for what happiness this world affords equal to the possession of such a woman as Sophia, I sincerely own I have never yet discovered.

As to the other persons who have made any considerable figure in this history, as some may desire to know a little more concerning them, we will proceed, in as few

words a possible, to satisfy their curiosity.

Allworthy hath never yet been prevailed upon to see Bliss; but he hath yielded to the importunity of Jones, backed by Sophia, to settle 2001. a year upon him; to which Jones hath privately added a third. Upon this income he lives in one of the northern counties, about 200 miles distant from London, and lays up 2001. a year out of it, in order to purchase a seat in the next parliament from a neighbouring borough, which he has bargained for with an attorney there. He is also lately turned methodist, in hopes of marrying a very rich widow of that sect, whose estate lies in that part of the kingdom.

Square died soon after he wrote the before-mentioned letter; and as to Thwackum, he continues at his vicarage. He hath made many fruitless attempts to regain the confidence of Allworthy, or to ingratiate himself with Jones, both of whom he flatters to their faces, and abuses behind their backs. But in his stead, Mr. Allworthy hath lately taken Mr. Abraham Adams into his house; of whom Sophia is grown immoderately fond, and declares he shall have the tuition of her chil-

dren.

Mrs. Fitzpatrick is separated from her husband, and retains the little remains of her fortune. She lives in reputation at the polite end of the town, and is so good an economist, that she spends three times the income of her fortune, without running in debt. She maintains a perfect intimacy with the lady of the Irish peer; and in acts of friendship to her, repays all the obligations she owes to her husband.

Mrs. Western was soon reconciled to her niece Sophia, and had spent two months together with her in the coun-

try. Lady Bellaston made the latter a formal visit at her return to town, where she behaved to Jones as to a perfeet stranger, and with great civility wished him joy on

his marriage.

Mr. Nightingale hath purchased an estate for his son in the neighbourhood of Jones, where the young gentleman, his lady, Mrs. Miller, and her little daughter refide, and the most agreeable intercourse subsists between the two families.

As to those of lower account, Mrs. Waters returned into the country, had a pension of 60l. a year fettled upon her by Mr. Allworthy, and is married to Parion Supple; on whom, at the instance of Sophia, Western hath bestowed a considerable living.

Black George, hearing the discovery that had been made, run away, and was never fince heard of; and Jones bestowed the money on his family; but not in equal proportions, for Molly had much the greatest

share.

As for Partridge, Jones hath fettled sol. a year on him; and he hath again fet up a school, in which he meets with much better encouragement than formerly; and there is now a treaty of marriage on foot, between him and Miss Molly Seagrim, which, through the mediation of Sophia.

is likely to take effect.

We now return to take leave of Mr. Jones and Sophia who, within two days after their marriage, attended Mr. Western and Mr. Allworthy into the country .. Western hath resigned his family feat and the greater part of his estate to his son-in-law, and hath retired to a lesser house of his, in another part of the country, which is better for hunting. Indeed, he is often as a visitant with Mr. Jones, who, as well as his daughter, hath an infinite delight in doing every thing in their power to please him: and this defire of theirs is attended with fuch fuccefs, that the old gentleman declares he was never happy in his life till now. He hath here a parlour and antichamber to himself, where he gets drunk with whom he pleases; and his daughter is still as ready as formerSophia hath already produced him two fine children, a boy and a girl, of whom the old gentleman is so fond, that he spends much of his time in the nursery; where he declares the tattling of his little grand daughter, who is above a year and a half old, is sweeter russe than the finest

cry of dogs in England.

Allworthy was likewise greatly liberal to Jones on the marriage, and hath omitted no instance of shewing his affection to him and his lady, who loves him as a father. Whatever in the nature of Jones had a tendency to vice, has been corrected by continual conversation with this good man, and by his union with the lovely and virtuous Sophia. He hath also, by reflection on his past follies, acquired a discretion and prudence very uncom-

mon in one of his lively parts.

To conclude; as there are not to be found a worthier man and woman than this fond couple, so neither can any be imagined more happy. They preserve the purest and tenderest affection for each other; an affection daily increased and confirmed by mutual endearments, and mutual esteem: nor is their conduct towards their relations and friends less amiable than towards one another; and such is their condescension, their indulgence, and their beneficence to those below them, that there is not a neighbour, a tenant, or a servant, who doth not most gratefully bless the day when Mr. Jones was married to his Sophia.

this sest nay hat rest